



# BRIEF BIOGRAPHIES

DATE DUE

95

## MEN AND WOMEN

by

W. STUART SEWELL



PERMABOOK

14 WEST 49TH ST

NEW YORK

1949  
PERMABOOKS

COPYRIGHT, 1943, 1949, BY GARDEN CITY PUBLISHING CO., INC.

*Printed in the United States of America*

## PREFACE

Lives of great men all remind us  
We can make our lives sublime  
And, departing, leave behind us  
Footprints on the sands of time

This verse from Longfellow's poem *A Psalm of Life* is a fitting introduction to this book, which deals with the lives of famous men and women.

The reader has here at his fingertips a compact biographical encyclopedia. The sketches, though necessarily brief, give the high spots in each person's career, as well as lesser events and facts which emphasize the personal characteristics of these men and women. The biographies are arranged in chronological order. All periods contribute interesting figures, the great men and women of American history are fully represented, and the book concludes with leaders in many fields in recent times right up to our own day.

The author wishes to express his appreciation to those who have worked with him in the preparation of this book, to mention especially the very large share of research, compilation and writing of the biographies by his wife, Dorothy Ralston Sewell, and to give sincere thanks to Ruth L. Benjamin and to Edward C. Schneider, each of whom prepared a group of the biographies. The writing of the sketches has proved a most absorbing and stimulating experience and it is our hope that the reader will find the same fascination that we have found in these brief biographies of famous men and women.

W. STUART SEWELL.



# CONTENTS

(Arranged Alphabetically)

Alexander the Great	9	Calvin, John . . .	50
Anthony, Susan B	183	Carlyle, Thomas	129
Aristotle . . .	8	Carnegie, Andrew .	188
Astor, John Jacob	114	Carson, Christopher	
Bach, Johann Sebastian	77	(Kit) .	186
Bacon, Francis	55	Catherine the Great	79
Balboa . . .	38	Cellini, Benvenuto	48
Balzac, Honoré de . .	155	Cervantes . . .	57
Barnum, Phineas Taylor	186	Cézanne, Paul . .	194
Barton, Clara	144	Charlemagne . . .	19
Beethoven, Ludwig van	104	Chaucer Geoffrey . .	27
Bell, Alexander Graham	179	Chiang Kai-shek	237
Bergson, Henri . .	221	Chopin Frédéric	121
Berlioz, Hector	160	Churchill, Winston	224
Bizet, Georges	165	Cicero	12
Bolivar, Simon	116	Clay, Henry . . .	118
Boone Daniel	85	Clemenceau Georges	213
Brahms, Johannes	163	Cleopatra	13
Browning, Elizabeth		Columbus, Christopher	37
Barrett	153	Confucius . . .	2
Browning, Robert	152	Cooper, James Fenimore . . .	115
Bryan, William Jennings	201	Copernicus . . .	44
Bryant, William Cullen	128	Cortes, Hernando .	41
Burbank, Luther . .	206	Cromwell Oliver . .	63
Burns, Robert	106	Curie, Marie . . .	218
Byrd, Richard Evelyn	229	Dante Alighieri . .	26
Byron, Lord George		Danton . . .	97
Gordon . . .	108	Darwin, Charles	145
Caesar, Julius . .	11		

Davis, Jefferson	140	Gilbert, William	
Debussy, Claude	196	Schwenk . . .	184
Descartes, René . . .	56	Gladstone, William	
Defoe, Daniel . . .	73	Ewart . . . . .	150
Demosthenes	5	Goethe, Johann	
De Valera, Eamon	223	Wolfgang von	101
Dewey, Thomas E . . .	243	Gounod, Charles	
✓ Dickens, Charles . . .	147	François . . . . .	165
Disraeli, Benjamin	150	Goya . . . . .	112
Dostoevsky, Feodor . . .	169	Grant, Ulysses Simpson	142
Dreyfus, Alfred . . . .	193	Greco, El . . . . .	58
Dumas, Alexandre . . .	156	✓ Greeley, Horace	126
Dvořák, Antonín	175	Grieg, Edvard . . .	175
Eddy, Mary Baker . . .	187	Gutenberg, Johannes	28
Edison, Thomas Alva . .	198	Hale, Nathan . . .	93
Einstein, Albert	220	Hamilton, Alexander .	88
Eisenhower, Dwight D	240	Händel, Georg Friedrich	78
✓ Eliot, George . . . . .	157	Hannibal . . . . .	10
✓ Elizabeth, Queen . . .	51	✓ Hardy, Thomas	182
Emerson, Ralph		Harun-al-Rashid . . .	20
Waldo . . . . .	129	Hawthorne, Nathaniel	132
Ericson, Leif . . . . .	20	Haydn, Franz Joseph	102
Faraday, Michael . . . .	146	Heine, Heinrich	111
Ford, Henry . . . . .	201	Hemingway, Ernest	232
Foster, Stephen Collins	137	✓ Henry VIII	46
France, Anatole . . . .	192	Henry, Patrick	91
✓ Franklin, Benjamin	86	✓ Herbert, Victor	204
Frederick the Great	79	Holmes, Oliver Wendell	136
✓ Freud, Sigmund . . . .	219	✓ Homer . . . . .	1
Fulton, Robert . . . . .	112	Hoover, Herbert . . .	227
✓ Galileo	58	Houston, Sam . . . .	124
Gandhi, Mohandas K. . .	225	Hudson, Henry	60
✓ Garibaldi, Giuseppe . .	166	Hugo, Victor Marie	154
Garrison, William Lloyd	126	✓ Ibsen, Henrik	171
Gauguin, Paul . . . . .	196	Irving, Washington . .	115
Genghis Khan . . . . .	24	Jackson, Andrew	117
George, Henry	179	✓ James, William . . .	168
Gershwin, George . . . .	231	✓ Jefferson, Thomas . .	89

✓ Joan of Arc	30	Morse, Samuel Finley	
✓ Johnson, Samuel	84	Breese	127
Jones, John Paul	94	Moussorgsky, Modest	173
Kant, Immanuel	105	Mozart, Wolfgang	
✓ Keats, John	110	Amadeus	103
Key, Francis Scott	113	Napoleon	99
Kipling, Rudyard	202	Nelson Lord Horatio	100
Knox, John	50	Nero	16
Lafayette	95	Newton, Isaac	72
Lec, Robert E	141	Nietzsche, Friedrich	167
Lenin, Nikolai	213	✓ Nightingale Florence	143
Lewis, Sinclair	231	Nobel, Alfred	207
Lincoln, Abraham	139	O'Neill, Eugene	230
Liszt, Franz	160	Paine, Thomas	91
✓ Lloyd George, David	212	Pasteur, Louis	178
Longfellow, Henry		Pearcy, Robert Edwin	200
Wadsworth	134	Penn, William	61
Louis XIV	70	Pepys, Samuel	65
Lowell, James Russell	137	Pericles	
• Luther, Martin	44	Pershing, John Joseph	211
MacArthur, Douglas	239	Peter the Great	76
MacDowell, Edward	203	Picasso Pablo	225
Machiavelli	32	Pizarro	42
Magellan	39	✓ Plato	7
Marco Polo	25	Poe, Edgar Allan	133
Marconi, Guglielmo	209	Ponce de Léon	13
Marie Antoinette	96	Puccini, Giacomo	205
Marshall, George C	242	Rabelais, François	17
Marshall, John	95	Raleigh, Sir Walter	73
✓ Marx, Karl	166	Rembrandt	67
Mary, Queen of Scots	52	Revere, Paul	92
Maupassant, Guy de	169	Richelieu	62
Mendel, Gregor	177	Rimsky-Korsakov,	
Mendelssohn, Felix	123	Nikolai	174
Michelangelo	37	Rhodes Cecil John	190
✓ Milton, John	64	Robespierre	98
✓ Mohammed	18	Rockefeller, John D	189
Morgan, John Pierpont	189	Rodin Auguste	197

Rogers, Will . . .	228	✓ Thackeray, William	
Roosevelt, Franklin		Makepeace . . .	148
Delano . . .	233	Thoreau, Henry David	130
Roosevelt, Theodore .	199	Titian . . . . .	49
✓ Rousseau, Jean Jacques	82	✓ Tolstoy, Lyov . . .	170
Rubens, Peter Paul .	66	Toscanini, Arturo . .	206
✓ Saint Augustine . .	16	Truman, Harry S. . .	243
Saint Francis of Assisi .	22	Twain, Mark . . . .	181
Saint Ignatius de Loyola	45	Vanderbilt, Cornelius .	187
Saint Patrick . . .	17	Van Gogh, Vincent . .	195
Saint Thomas Aquinas	24	Velasquez . . . . .	68
Sand, George . . .	122	Verdi, Giuseppe . . .	162
Santayana, George . .	222	✓ Vergil . . . . .	14
Sappho . . . . .	2	Vespucci, Amerigo . .	34
Savonarola . . . . .	31	✓ Victoria, Queen . .	148
Schopenhauer, Arthur .	123	Villon, François . . .	29
Schubert, Franz . . .	120	Vinci, Leonardo da . .	35
Schumann, Robert . .	121	✓ Voltaire . . . . .	81
✓ Scott, Sir Walter . .	107	Wagner, Richard . . .	161
✓ Shakespeare, William .	54	Washington, George . .	87
✓ Shaw, George Bernard .	216	✓ Watt, James . . . .	84
✓ Shelley, Percy Bysshe .	109	Webster, Daniel . . .	119
Sibhus, Jean . . . .	223	✓ Wells, H. G . . . .	217
✓ Socrates . . . . .	5	Wesley, John . . . .	83
Sousa, John Philip . .	204	Whistler, James Abbott	
Spinoza . . . . .	71	McNeill . . . . .	194
Stalin, Joseph . . .	236	Whitman, Walt . . . .	158
Stevenson, Robert Louis	182	✓ Whitney, Eli . . . .	113
Stowe, Harriet Beecher	138	Whittier, John Greenleaf	135
Strauss, Johann . . .	176	Wilde, Oscar . . . . .	184
Stravinsky, Igor . . .	224	William the Conqueror	21
Sullivan, Arthur . . .	185	Williams, Roger . . . .	61
Sun Yat-sen . . . . .	215	Willkie, Wendell L. . .	238
Svedenborg, Emanuel .	75	Wilson, Woodrow . . .	210
✓ Swift, Jonathan . . .	74	Wright, Wilbur and	
Tchaikovsky, Peter Illich	172	Orville . . . . .	207
✓ Tennyson, Alfred . . .	151	Young, Brigham . . . .	124
		Zola, Émile . . . . .	191

## HOMER

Although Homer, the epic poet of Greece, is one of the most famous names in all of literature, little is known about the man, it is not even certain whether he was one man or a group of men. Traditional but unauthentic accounts of Homer's life describe him as blind, poor, and old, wandering from city to city. That conception of the poet is romantic but unfounded in history. Estimates on the time of his birth vary from 685 B.C. to 1159 B.C. Many Greek cities claim to be Homer's birthplace, but none can advance concrete proof. Nevertheless, it is known that the Homeric poems exerted tremendous influence over Greek education, literature and culture. They were regarded as a basis of morality, a source-book of knowledge, a textbook for oratory and a standard of literary criticism.

The chief works of Homer, which occupy a high place in the world's literature, are the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey*. Both poems are absorbing adventure tales and give an insight into the character of the men and women of Greece of that day, even if they fail to furnish any biographical data on Homer himself. The *Iliad* tells the story of the few weeks' action in the siege of Troy (Ilium) by the Greeks. Achilles, cheated by his chief of a captive girl as one of the prizes of war, refuses to fight and sulks in his tent. The warrior becomes aroused, however, when his bosom friend is slain by the Trojans, then he enters the battle and in revenge kills the Trojan prince Hector. Within this story the complete history of the nine years of war that preceded the episode is recalled.

The *Odyssey* relates the adventures of Ulysses (Odysseus), one of the Greek warriors, during the ten years of his wandering after setting out from Troy to his home in Greece. It concludes the story of the siege of Troy and the capture of the

city by one of the most famous ruses in history. The Greeks built a huge wooden horse, secretly filled it with soldiers, and then ostensibly sailed away, leaving the horse before the gates of Troy. When the Trojans took the horse into the city, the fall of Troy ensued.

## SAPPHO

Until comparatively recent times the work of Sappho, the greatest poetess of Greece, survived only in quotations by ancient authors, but within the last fifty years, fragments of papyrus rolls and vellum codices containing authentic texts of Sappho's lyrics have been discovered. The chief themes are love and the beauty of nature. The extraordinarily moving effect of the poems is derived from the combination of extreme emotion and complete simplicity of language.

In spite of her fame, few details of Sappho's history are certain. She was a native of Mytilene in Lesbos, probably came from an aristocratic family, and was born about 600 B.C. She was exiled from Mytilene, along with other aristocrats when a democratic uprising took place, and may have gone to Sicily. She practiced and taught her art in a school of maidens to whom she was passionately devoted. She wrote an ode for each maiden when the maiden departed to be married. Nothing is known about her death. The legend that she threw herself from the Leucadian rock, a high cliff now known as Sappho's Leap, because of her unrequited love for the heatman Phaon, is entirely unsupported.

## CONFUCIUS

Confucius was the author of many of the pithy proverbs on morality and ethics that have become copy-book maxims for all the world. One of them is the Golden Rule. "What you do not like when done to yourself, do not do to others." And beyond these verbal gems, the Chinese characteristics of

graciousness, tact, and scrupulous observance of rules of etiquette remain testimony to the influence of the Chinese philosopher Confucius who was a great and gentlemanly teacher. His clan name was K'ung. In his native land he is known by the name of Kung Fu-tze (of which Confucius is a Latin approximation), meaning "the philosopher or master K'ung." He was born in 551 B.C., in the state of Lu, which is now part of the province of Shantung. He was of honored ancestry and able to acquire a good education despite poverty in his early youth. At the age of fifteen he had set his mind on becoming learned. When he was nineteen years old he married and assumed a modest public office. In his twenty-second year he conceived an idea for a school at which young men might be instructed in the principles of right thinking and government. Within a short time he realized his plan. Success, but not monetary reward, attended his efforts. At one time during his life about 3,000 students, including influential statesmen and scholars, were registered in his school.

When he was fifty-two, Confucius was appointed magistrate of the city of Chung-tu. He was successful in that function and was subsequently made minister of crime in the state of Lu. Reports tell of a sudden decrease in crime and a wonderful reformation among the people and say that Confucius was "the idol of the people." Political intrigue, however, brought about a situation which caused him to quit his office in a few years. He then began a period of wandering throughout the Chinese kingdom. Thirteen years later he returned and was offered a political position, but he refused.

Confucius believed that the ancient Chinese moral code was the foundation of all social and political virtue. He taught that the relationship between ruler and subject, as that between father and son, should be based on the principle of benevolent, righteous rule, and sincere righteous submission. He long hoped that under his guidance one of China's rulers might test his teachings by applying them. Finally, in despair as his hopes remained ungratified, he welcomed death when it came to him, saying "No intelligent ruler arises to take me as his master. My time has come to die." He died in 478 B.C.

## PERICLES

The name of Pericles and the phrase 'the golden age of Athens' occur often together. For more than thirty years the statesman Pericles was the most important man in Athens, where he was born about 495 B.C. During his life Greek art and intellectual activity were at their peak. He received his training from outstanding teachers of the age. In 469 he entered upon his career as a statesman. Until his time public offices had been held only by the most influential citizens. He brought about a complete democratization of the state and was champion of the people's rights in opposition to his old personal friend, Cimon, who was leader of the aristocratic party. Among the changes Pericles instituted were the enactments that citizens serving as soldiers, jurymen, or magistrates should receive salaries and that the public treasury should pay theater admission for those who could not afford it. Under his influence even the highest offices were made accessible to all. The aim of his foreign policy was to make Athens supreme in Greece, and when he failed to establish her absolute military supremacy, he turned to the consolidation of her naval power. But it was his artistic achievements that were Pericles' greatest triumphs. Among the many public buildings erected under his leadership on the Acropolis was the Parthenon, the decoration of which was the masterly work of the sculptor Phidias. Athens became the most beautiful city in the world.

The last years of Pericles' life were tempestuous. The Peloponnesian War, involving Athens and Sparta, kept him busy with military affairs, while various troubles hampered him in Athens. Of his two best friends, Phidias was prosecuted on two charges and arrested, and Anaxagoras, a noted philosopher, left Athens after being threatened because of his atheist views. There was also a scandalous charge against Aspasia, the mistress of Pericles, which troubled him deeply. The people saw their lands being overrun by the enemy, and a plague broke out. All this caused him to become so unpopular that he was deposed for a time, but he was soon reinstated with more power than before. The plague, however, had left its

mark on him, and he died in the autumn of 429. He was an able orator and military leader and the central figure of a group composed of such distinguished personalities as the dramatists and poets, Aeschylus, Sophocles, and Euripides, the philosopher Socrates, and many others.

## DEMOSTHENES

Demosthenes, characterized as the greatest orator of the ancient world, was born about 383 B.C. in Attica. He decided early to devote himself to a public career, and entered public affairs when he was about twenty-five. The first part of his life was devoted to attempting to persuade his countrymen to unite and resist the encroachments of Philip, the king of Macedonia. In this he was unsuccessful, and Philip eventually overcame the Athenians, whom he treated with the greatest consideration. Demosthenes pronounced the funeral oration over those killed in battle. His speeches against Philip are called *Philippics*.

For his services before and after the crisis it was proposed that a golden crown be awarded to Demosthenes, but a former actor and clerk of the Assembly, Aeschines, attacked the suggestion. In defending himself, Demosthenes delivered his oration *On the Crown*, proclaimed almost unanimously by critics as the most perfect piece of oratory of ancient times. In 322 Demosthenes was forced to flee from Athens, where the power of Macedonia, now hostile to him, still prevailed. His death, which occurred before his pursuers found him, was believed to have been caused by self-administered poison.

## SOCRATES

Although the Greek philosopher-teacher Socrates left no writings, he is considered one of the world's greatest thinkers.

The writings of Plato have been the chief vehicle through which Socrates' influence has been brought to the modern world. The Greek historian Xenophon also wrote extensively about Socrates and his work.

Born in Athens about 469 B.C., Socrates, in his early life, followed the profession of his father, a sculptor. Socrates was homely, and his complete disdain of wealth and comfort exasperated his wife, Xanthippe. He was brave in battle and endured hardship without flinching. A man of principle, Socrates on at least two occasions risked death rather than perform deeds he thought wrong.

Although he accepted the traditional deities, Socrates believed in one supreme ruler of the universe. He thought it his divinely appointed mission to test the reputed wisdom of the great and the accepted opinions of the average man. He is credited with originating the scientific definition and formal inductive reasoning as aids in thought. The basis of his ethics is the principle that all vice is ignorance and that no one is wilfully bad.

Socrates made many enemies. Conservatives were alarmed when his teaching of the young aristocrats spread skepticism of contemporary practices and forms of social thinking and organization, and inspired attempts to modify accepted government policies by legislation. Others feared the philosopher because he questioned traditional morality and proposed to substitute reason for custom. Aristophanes expressed his hostility toward Socrates in *The Clouds*.

In 399 B.C. Socrates was charged with godlessness and corruption of the youth of Athens. Convicted, he had the opportunity of seeking safety in escape, an alternative sanctioned by all but the very letter of the law in those times. But he refused to flee, and drank the cup of poison hemlock, the prescribed method of execution.

In many of the "Dialogues" of Plato, Socrates is the chief character. The account of Socrates' trial, defense and death is given magnificently in the *Phaedo* and the *Apology*.

## PLATO

The name Plato, derived from a Greek word meaning "broad," was given to the Greek philosopher probably because of his broad shoulders. Plato, whose original name was Aristocles, was born in Athens in 427 B.C., and tradition says he died on his birthday anniversary eighty years later. His family was one of the most important in Athens, and through his mother's relatives he became acquainted with the philosopher Socrates, whose influence on Plato's life was decisive, and whose teachings have come down to the present mostly through Plato. In his youth Plato made a mark in athletics. Before he was twenty he wrote dramatic and lyric verse which according to one account he tore up after he came under the guidance of Socrates. His early ambition was to enter politics but he became convinced that no man of conscience could find a place in that field so long as it was controlled by a mob of unthinking men.

After the death of Socrates, Plato was reported to have traveled extensively. His own statement was that he visited Italy and Sicily, where he was shocked by the gross sensuality of the life he found. In Sicily, however, he became a friend of Dion, whose brother-in-law, Dionysius I, was the ruler of Syracuse. In his later life Plato intervened in Syracusan politics as the tutor of Dionysius II but the results were not satisfactory and after that Plato made no more attempts at political activity.

About 387 Plato founded his Academy over which he presided until his death. Although to the modern world he is most important as an incomparably great philosophical writer it is probable that the Academy devoted to the systematic pursuit of philosophy and scientific research was more important to Plato than his writing. The most notable of the Academy's students was the philosopher Aristotle.

Plato's writings are divided into fifty-six books, and almost all of his works are written in dialogue form, with several characters participating. This fact presents a difficulty in studying his own philosophy, because it is a question of doubt

which of his *dramatis personae* should be accepted as the spokesman for Plato's own ideas. Among the most important of these "Dialogues" are the *Symposium* (on love); the *Phaedo* (giving Socrates' teachings on the immortality of the soul); the *Republic* (on the ideal state), the first of all Utopian books, the *Theaetetus* (on the Nature of Knowledge). and the *Timaeus* (on the Nature of the Physical World).

## ARISTOTLE

One of the greatest single contributors to the enlightenment of the world, the Greek philosopher Aristotle collected, added to, and organized into a science, what was probably the sum total of the knowledge of his day. He was born at Stagira, Macedon, in the year 383 B.C., the son of a physician at the court of King Amyntas whose grandson was Alexander the Great. He was orphaned at an early age, and there are indications that he was a wild and reckless youth. At seventeen, however, he entered the Academy of Plato and became its most distinguished student.

After the death of Plato in 347 B.C., Aristotle went to Atarneus, one of the Greek city-states of Asia Minor, where he married the sister of its ruler, Hermeias. Three years later, after a short sojourn on the island of Lesbos, he received an invitation from Philip of Macedon to become the teacher of his son, who was to become known as Alexander the Great. Thereafter, until Alexander departed on his Asiatic expedition of conquest, in 334, Aristotle continued to live with the youthful monarch as a friend and counselor. Subsequently, it is told, wherever Alexander traveled he would send back specimens of native fauna and flora, to further his teacher's study and research. It was in this manner that Aristotle was able to establish what was probably the world's first zoological garden.

In Athens, in 332, Aristotle opened a school known as the "Lyceum," and because of his practice of walking about while teaching it became known as "Peripatetic." Despite the hostility of Athenians toward Macedon, by whom they had been

subjugated, the school attracted many students and became a center of research in biology, history and the science of government. In his teaching and writing, there was not one subject discussed in his day that Aristotle did not touch upon and clarify. His chief works are: the *Organon*, the *Politics*, the *Nicomachean Ethics*, the *Art of Poetry*, the *Logic*; the *History of Animals*, and *Concerning the Sky*. In 323 the death of Alexander emboldened the Athenians to display openly their resentment against all things Macedonian and Aristotle, facing trial for impiety and sedition chose exile from Athens rather than the death penalty he thought inevitable. Arriving at Chalcis, in Euboea, he fell ill. The next year (322 B.C.), he died. With him the greatest period of Greek civilization came to an end.

## ALEXANDER THE GREAT

Conqueror of the whole of the civilized world that was known to him and to his contemporaries, Alexander the Great may well be called the father of empire. His father, Philip, by war and diplomacy had raised Macedon to a position of leadership among the Greek states. Alexander proceeded to Hellenize the world.

Alexander the Great was born in 356 B.C. at Pella, the Macedonian capital. From his twelfth year he studied under the tutorship of Aristotle. At the age of sixteen, he was entrusted with the government of his country while his father marched against Byzantium. When he was twenty, his father was murdered and he, after sweeping several rival claimants out of his way, came into possession of the throne and the powerful Macedonian army.

In 334, after strengthening his position at home, he crossed over into Asia Minor where he succeeded in freeing the Greek cities of Ionia from Persian rule. Thence he proceeded through Syria and Phoenicia, into Egypt, where, in 332, he founded Alexandria which was to become the seat of Greek culture for the next 150 years. He then led his forces through Persia,

destroying the army of Darius, the Persian ruler, and penetrated into that part of India that is now known as Punjab. There his soldiers rebelled, refusing to march farther to the East. Alexander gave in, and the march home was begun.

Alexander had brought the East and the West into contact. Aiming at the fusion of Greek and Oriental culture by intermarriage and exchange of customs, he had set an example by marrying a Persian princess. Nevertheless he had seen to it that wherever he conquered, Greek became the language of government. His conquests marked the beginning of rule by empires.

On his homeward trek, Alexander got as far as Babylon when he fell ill. Aware that death was imminent, he had his soldiers, one by one, pass by his bed while he bid them farewell. On June 13, 323 B.C., he died.

## HANNIBAL

Hannibal, the great Carthaginian general, who was born in 247 B.C., has been characterized as one of the noblest as well as one of the most unfortunate men of antiquity. He was taken to Spain at the age of nine by his father, Hamilcar Barca, who swore his son to eternal hatred of the Romans and educated him in the arts of war. When his father died, Hannibal, then about twenty-five, became commander of the army and of the province of Spain. He was worshipped by his troops, who always found him fair, yet he bears the responsibility of having started in 219 B.C. one of the most terrible wars in ancient history, the Second Punic War. His object then, as throughout his entire life, was the revenge of Carthage against Rome, a goal which was doomed to failure.

The first part of the war resulted in three decisive victories for Hannibal, but the Romans eventually began to see through his strategy of exploiting the fighting spirit in pitched battle. They initiated a war of attrition which ultimately brought them victory, although it was the year 203 before Hannibal withdrew his forces from Italy to go to the assistance of his

own country. According to historians, most of whom regard Hannibal as one of the greatest strategists of all time, the surprising thing is that Hannibal was successful in remaining in Italy as long as he did

In 202 B.C. he advised his countrymen to make peace with the Romans, and Carthage surrendered. He was subsequently accused by the Romans of conspiring against the peace and was forced to flee to Syria. When that country also was conquered by the Romans, one of the terms imposed was the surrender of Hannibal. Again he escaped, this time to the court of Prusias, king of Bithynia, one of the few remaining despots not under Roman rule. In the course of events, in 183 Prusias betrayed Hannibal. When Hannibal found his house surrounded by soldiers, he committed suicide by taking poison he had long kept in a ring.

The most notable phase of Hannibal's personality was his military genius. He has been accused of cruelty by some, while others maintain he was no more barbaric than the war standards of the time allowed. Charges of avarice can be explained by his constant need for resources. He was a cultured, moral man, acquainted with several languages and able to speak and write Greek. He is reported to have been married to a Spanish woman by whom there were apparently no children.

## ✓ JULIUS CAESAR

Statesman and military leader of ancient Rome, Caesar has made his name a synonym for absolute autocracy. Yet he won his power and prestige on the basis of his championship of democracy.

Born of a patrician family in 100 B.C., Gaius Julius Caesar was afforded an education suited to his rank. Married at the age of seventeen to Cornelia, the daughter of Lucius Cinna, leader of the Popular party, he angered the oligarch, Sulla, who demanded that the young man divorce his bride. Caesar refused and fled. Only after Sulla's death in 78 B.C. was he able to return to Rome.

Caesar's public life began in 74 B.C. when he was elected to his first public office. In 67 B.C. he divorced Cornelia after all, because there was gossip about her, and married Pompeia, a relative of Pompey, then one of the democratic champions. By tact and wisdom he brought together the contending factions of Pompey and Crassus, and with them in 60 B.C. formed the first triumvirate to rule Rome. Dividing the empire among them, Pompey obtained the rule of the central and southern portion, including all of Italy, Caesar, the western part, including Gaul, Crassus, the eastern sphere, including Persia where ultimately he was killed.

In Gaul, Caesar by force of arms doubled the territory under Roman rule. It is his account of this campaign, called his *Commentaries*, that every schoolboy who studies Latin reads. He even won the submission of the main tribes of Britain. But Pompey, growing jealous of Caesar's increasing popularity, moved the Senate to order Caesar to disband his army. Instead of complying, Caesar led his army on to Rome as Pompey fled, leaving him the sole ruler of Rome. A year later he destroyed the forces that Pompey had organized, on the plains of Thessaly. He continued his campaigns in Africa and Asia Minor, completely eliminating his enemies. Then he returned to Rome where he was jubilantly received by the populace.

Caesar now gathered all power into his hands although he tried to preserve the name and forms of the republic. He was made dictator for life. He instituted many democratic reforms in government, both at home and in the colonies. But his power and greatness had alarmed his friends and associates. They joined together and on the ides of March (March 15), 44 B.C., they stabbed him to death.

## CICERO

Marcus Tullius Cicero was the greatest orator of Rome and one of her outstanding statesmen and men of letters. He believed that an orator should possess almost universal knowl-

edge and, therefore, prepared for his career by studying languages, literature, law, oratory, and philosophy, and by traveling in Greece and Asia. He pleaded his first legal cases at twenty-six.

The sensitive and emotional nature which enabled Cicero to achieve perfect linguistic eloquence served to weaken him as a figure in public life, where moral courage and stability of thought were needed. For instance, he was disgusted with the cruelty of Roman circuses, but he attended them nevertheless, taking along his writing tablets and not looking at the performance. In his career as a statesman he varied between the extremes of popularity and exile. While Julius Caesar was in power, the orator lived in retirement, writing. In *De Republica* he outlined the ideal of a free republic. There are fifty-seven orations by Cicero in existence, notably those against the traitor Lucius Catiline and the invectives against Mark Antony, called *Philippics*. These latter were responsible for Cicero's death, for when Antony came to power after Caesar's assassination, he had Cicero hunted down and killed. Cicero was born on January 3, 106 B.C. and died on December 7, 43 B.C. His orations are still studied by high school students as models of literary distinction and through them he still lives as a man of high ideals, striving ineffectively against the degeneracy of his time.

## CLEOPATRA

Cleopatra, a queen of Egypt and a world-famous beauty, whose stakes in love were her kingdom and her life, met with success in her first two conquests but failed on her third. Cleopatra, who was born about 69 B.C., became joint heir to Egypt's throne with her brother, Ptolemy, when she was seventeen. She was expected not only to share legal authority with him but also to marry him. She was soon deprived of her rights and withdrew to Syria. Her initial victory was over the Roman general Julius Caesar. When Caesar landed at Alexandria, Cleopatra's chief concern was to reach him ahead of her brother. She immediately set out with only one attendant.

Arriving dishevelled and without any means of making a brilliant entrance, she decided on making a dramatic one. The servant carried her, rolled into an Oriental rug, to the feet of Caesar. Since she was clad in little more than the rug, when it was unrolled, the fifty-three-year-old emperor was duly impressed. Ptolemy was killed in the conflict which secured the throne for Cleopatra, and she poisoned a younger brother who took Ptolemy's place. Caesar tarried in Egypt for several months, and Cleopatra returned with him to Rome, where she lived openly as his mistress. Her son by him was named Cæsarion. After Caesar's assassination she fled to her own country.

When another famous warrior, Mark Antony, gained control in Rome, he became Cleopatra's second conquest, completely captivated by her beauty and the Oriental splendor of her court. They vied with one another in giving costly entertainments. During one of these the queen reputedly dissolved a priceless pearl in vinegar and drank it. She and Antony had three children. The people of Rome eventually grew dissatisfied with their leader, and Octavius Caesar was dispatched to attack Antony. He subdued both Antony's and Cleopatra's forces and reached the walls of Alexandria. Cleopatra retreated to a mausoleum she had built years before. Antony believed she had betrayed him by deserting in the midst of a great naval battle, and committed suicide by stabbing himself. One account says that Cleopatra had him brought to her and nursed him until he died. Octavius, who was oblivious to her charms, wanted to lead her through the streets of Rome as his captive. When she saw escape was impossible, she killed herself on August 29, 30 B.C., by having an asp smuggled to her in a basket and allowing it to bite her. With her death Egypt became a province of Rome.

## VERGIL

In his last illness the Roman poet Vergil (Publius Vergilius Maro) called for his papers with the intention of burning the

*Aeneid*, which was finished but not finally corrected at the time of his death. His dissatisfaction with the manuscript was probably due to his ideal of perfection, which death prevented his achieving. The poem was rescued through a command of the Roman emperor Augustus. Thus was preserved to literature the work which is regarded as Vergil's finest and which makes him one of the supreme poets of all time. It is an historical epic written with the purpose of glorifying Rome and Emperor Augustus—an epic both of national life and of human character.

Vergil was not a citizen of Rome by birth. He was born near Mantua in northern Italy on October 15, 70 B.C. At that time inhabitants of Mantua did not enjoy Roman citizenship. Vergil's father, who was an independent landowner with an income from his farm and apiculture, gave his son a thorough education in grammar, rhetoric and philosophy. Vergil was sent to Milan for further study, from there he went to Naples. Finally in 53 B.C. he arrived in Rome, where the teacher who influenced him the most was Siro, the Epicurean. In addition to literature, the young student delved into philosophy, mathematics and medicine. Nothing further is known about Vergil for a period of several years. It seems that he returned to his father's home and devoted his time to managing the estate and studying. The next record of him is in 43 B.C., at which time there was considerable difficulty over the confiscation of his father's land by the war veterans of the Roman triumphs. Soon afterwards Vergil returned to live in Rome.

Probably in 37 B.C. the ten pastoral poems known as the *Eclogues* or *Bucolics* were published. These are divided into two classes—the purely pastoral poems dealing with the life and loves of shepherds, and those in which Vergil and his contemporaries appear in the guise of country folk. From 37 to 30 B.C. he composed the *Georgics*, a poem on agriculture written to arouse interest in rural life. It is said to be the most perfect in finish of Vergil's works. The last years of the poet's life were occupied with the *Aeneid*. He was seized with an illness during a trip to Athens and died on September 21, 19 B.C. (Dante made Vergil a chief character in *The Divine Comedy*.)

## NERO

The Roman emperor Nero who, according to popular legend, played his lute while Rome burned, lived from 37 to 68. Upon his father's death, his mother, Agrippina, began scheming to secure the throne for Nero. She first married the emperor, then arranged for Nero to marry the emperor's daughter, and next poisoned the emperor and set Nero on the throne. Nero's advisers, sensing the streak of savage passion in his nature, encouraged his love for a beautiful freedwoman, Acte, in the hope that it would lessen Agrippina's influence. Agrippina was eventually murdered, but it was Poppaea Sabina, a woman very different in character from Acte, who brought it about. Poppaea next induced Nero to have his wife murdered, and then she married Nero.

Of all the disasters which befell Rome under this emperor's rule, a great fire was the worst. Nero was suspected of having kindled it. It was followed by pestilence and widespread discontent. Poppaea died in 65. Eventually Nero became so frightened of a revolt that he stole out of Rome and attempted to hide. A sentence of death was passed upon him, but he gathered enough courage to commit suicide before his capture. He killed himself on June 9, 68, in the fourteenth year of his reign.

## SAINT AUGUSTINE

One of the earliest Christian philosophers, Augustine was born of Roman parents at Tagaste, in Pro-Consular North Africa, on November 13, 354. His mother, Monica, who exercised a strong influence on his life, was a Christian from birth and his father was a convert. He went to school at Madaura and, later, at Carthage where he mastered rhetoric and logic, among other subjects. In his youth he seems to have been given to licentiousness, for which he later experienced overwhelming remorse. At the age of nineteen he contracted an alliance with a young woman who shortly became the mother of his son, Adcodatus.

For several years Augustine lectured in rhetoric first in his native city, then at Carthage. In 383 he went to Rome and, in the following year, to Milan where his mother joined him. For a number of years he had been a follower of Manichaeism (a religion which, at that time, rivaled Christianity), now he turned toward Christianity. Finally persuaded, he dismissed the woman who had been his wife in what he came to consider a sinful state, and with his son was baptized on April 25, 387.

Soon afterwards he returned to Africa. He decided to enter the priesthood and was ordained in 391. Four years later he was made a colleague of Valerius, the Bishop of Hippo, whom he succeeded in 396.

For most of the rest of his life he was engaged in three religious controversies—against the Manichaeans, the Donatists and the Pelagians—in the course of which he developed many theological doctrines which later became fundamental dogma of the Catholic Church. His best known writings are his *Confessions* and *The City of God*.

Augustine died on August 28, 430 at Hippo when that city was under siege by the Vandals.

## SAINT PATRICK

The autobiography (*Confession*) of Saint Patrick, Ireland's patron saint, deals chiefly with his work. Although it reveals him as a positive active personality, nearly all the facts about his life are obscure. His British name was Sucat, Patrick is the anglicized form of his Roman name, Patricius. He was born about 389 in Scotland or England. At sixteen he was captured by Gaelic raiders and carried to Ireland, where he served six years tending the sheep of an Ulster chieftain. During this time he became converted to Christianity, for there were already British missionaries in Ireland, and after he escaped to France, he entered a monastery. In 432 he obeyed a vision which told him to return to Ireland and Christianize that country. His work toward that end was so successful that he became known as the one who "found Ireland all heathen and left it all

Christian ' He destroyed the idols, burned the Druid books, started a seminary He founded 300 churches and baptized 12,000 people He died on March 17, 461 Today March 17 is celebrated all over the world as Saint Patrick's feast day

Legend says that Saint Patrick so charmed the snakes with his music that they followed him to the seashore, where they were driven into the water and drowned Unfortunately for the legend there were no snakes in Ireland Yet even without the myths associated with him, Patrick would still be the most beloved figure in Irish history

## MOHAMMED

Mohammed, Arabian prophet, lawgiver and conqueror, founded the religion of Islam and thereby provided the Arabs with a unifying force that enabled them to become a great and powerful nation His teachings, as set forth in the Koran, are mainly that there is but one God, Allah, and Mohammed is his prophet, that an immortal soul is destined for eternal damnation or happiness, as penalty or reward for earthly conduct, and that abstemiousness and the forgiving of injuries are the prime virtues Prayer, fasting, almsgiving and pilgrimages to Mecca are prescribed. Polygamy is permitted, slavery is accepted, and the faithful are urged to spread Islam by the sword

Mohammed was born in Mecca, some time about 570 A.D. His family was a fairly prosperous one Orphaned in his infancy, he was reared by an uncle. When he was twenty-five he married a wealthy widow, fifteen years his senior, left his employment as a camel-driver and became a shopkeeper in his native city. Somehow he gained a reputation for great practical wisdom but there is no evidence that he could either read or write.

When he was forty he became convinced, through a vision, that he was a special messenger of God Until 616 he asserted his claim and gained followers in secrecy. Persecution sent him and his followers into exile There he received an invitation to

the city of Medina, as its dictator. The beginning of the collective flight thither (called the *hijra*) marked the initiation of the Mohammedan era, the year 622, in which it occurred, became the year 1 in the Moslem calendar. Eight years later he had organized his followers in such force that he was able to conquer Mecca, and there, on June 7, 632, he died.

After his death, his believers increased and, by force of arms, spread Islam until, in the fifteenth century, it dominated all of North Africa, Arabia, Persia, and most of the Iberian peninsula.

## CHARLEMAGNE

Charles, the son of Pepin III and grandson of Charles Martel, completed the work of building a Frankish empire which his antecedents had begun, and thus won the name, "Charlemagne," or Charles the Great. He was born in 742 and, upon the death of his father, fourteen years later, he inherited, according to Frankish law, half of the realm. When his brother, Carloman, died in 771, he gained the other half.

In that year he renounced his bride of the year before, the daughter of the king of Lombardy, and married another. In retaliation, the Lombard king sought the assistance of the pope in deposing Charles and, failing in that, began a campaign of plundering in Central Italy. Charles came to the aid of the pope, defeated the Lombardians and proclaimed himself their sovereign. To the pope he made a vast grant of territory, known later as the States of the Church.

By 800, the kingdom of the Franks included all France, nearly all of Germany and Austria, and all of Italy except the kingdom of Naples. Two years earlier he had met with disaster in Spain during a campaign against the Moors, when a band of rebellious Basques set upon his army's rear and slew, among others, Charles' lieutenant, Roland, whose death is celebrated in song and story.

On Christmas Day in 800, Charles was crowned by Pope Leo III as emperor of the Holy Roman empire. A plan to com-

bine it with the Byzantine empire, through the marriage of Charles and the Empress Irene, failed when the latter was overthrown. A war ensued between the two powers, but peace was restored in 812, without substantial gain to either.

Charles made numerous contributions to the science of government. He systematically divided his realm and separated the various functions—military, judicial and administrative. He founded hospitals and established schools for women as well as for men. Under his rule the Catholic Church became a real temporal as well as spiritual power. He died on January 28, 814.

## HARUN-AL-RASHID

Harun-al-Rashid was a caliph of Bagdad. He is most familiar to Western readers as the hero of the collection of stories known as the *Arabian Nights' Entertainment*, in which he, his wife Zobeide, with his vizier and his chief eunuch are prominent characters. Born about 765, Harun was the fifth caliph of the dynasty of the Abbassides. He was the most powerful monarch of his race. Under his rule, esteemed as the golden era of the Mohammedan nations and distinguished by his conquests as well as a strong internal administration, Bagdad's caliphate was at its height in splendor. Harun's fame spread to the West, he and Charlemagne exchanged gifts and compliments as the rulers of East and West, respectively.

Harun, who was a poet and a scholar himself, patronized art and learning. He was also a despot, in his later years suspicious of all around him. He executed his vizier and his near relatives, and these together with other violent acts brought about rebellion. He died on April 2, 809.

## LEIF ERICSON

The father of Leif Ericson, traditional discoverer of America, was Eric the Red, born in Norway about 950. He

committed homicide and fled to Iceland, and in 984 he reached Greenland. There he established a town and was the ruling chief during his lifetime. His son Leif, is credited with having Christianized Greenland and discovered a transatlantic country about the year 1000. According to the Icelandic sagas, or stories of adventure, he had been in Norway. There he was baptized by King Olaf and passed a winter in the Christian king's court. When he left for Greenland, he was accompanied by a missionary-priest and other clergy.

On the homeward voyage they were blown off their course and landed in a country which he called Vinland, from the vines which abounded there. It was never decided whether it was Labrador, Newfoundland, or some region further south, possibly New England. Leif and his men built huts and remained there for some time. On the way home they picked up some shipwrecked sailors near Greenland. Following his eventful voyage Leif was called Leif the Lucky. After about four centuries the colony in Greenland was wiped out, probably by plague or famine. Leif Ericson's landing in America was lost sight of, because it was not followed up by colonization.

## WILLIAM THE CONQUEROR

William I, king of England, called the Conqueror, was the most powerful monarch of his time. He was born in Normandy, France, in 1027, the illegitimate son of the duke of Normandy by the daughter of a tanner, and therefore sometimes known as William the Bastard. His father died when William was still a boy, three of his guardians were murdered and William, succeeding to the dukedom, was carefully protected. Upon the death of his cousin Edward the Confessor, king of England who had been brought up in Normandy, William claimed the English crown, alleging that Edward had promised it to him. To support his claim he landed in England with a force variously estimated at from 25,000 to 60,000. At the Battle of

Hastings in 1066, one of the memorable dates in British history, William won a great victory, he was crowned king on Christmas Day at Westminster Abbey. For many years William was kept occupied by revolts. At first his measures were mild, but later he treated his subjects as conquered people, and the nobility left the country in great numbers. English laws were changed, the feudal system was adopted in regard to land tenure and service, the lords holding their property under William as his vassals, and French was established as the official language. In the latter part of his reign William had a survey made of English resources. This record still exists under the title of *Domesday Book*. Much of William's time was devoted to extending the boundaries of Normandy. On September 9, 1087, while fighting Philip I of France, William was thrown from his horse and died at Rouen.

Although William's private life was religious and wise he was merciless and unscrupulous in punishing those who opposed him. His suppression of resistance in York and Durham resulted in the death of about 100 000 persons, and the entire section was laid waste. Because Malcolm, king of Scotland, sided with English rebels William attacked Scotland and brought it under his power. Following an uprising in 1075 William put to death Waltheof, earl of Huntingdon and Northumberland, husband of his niece, and the last English earl. This was one of the deepest stains on his career, for Waltheof was innocent of complicity in the revolt. Another of William's outrages was the creation of New Forest in order to satisfy his love of the hunt. To clear this hunting ground, villages and farms were destroyed and the inhabitants for thirty miles around were expelled. Then the king passed a law that anyone killing a deer should be blinded.

## SAINT FRANCIS OF ASSISI

The founder of the Franciscan Order, Saint Francis of Assisi was born in 1182, the son of a rich Italian merchant Pietro

Bernardone who, out of fondness for the French, changed the boy's baptismal name, Giovanni, to Francisco. As a youth he joined freely in the exploits and pleasures of his fellows. In the course of one of the feuds of the region, he was once taken prisoner and was held captive for a year during which he contracted a serious illness. It was in this period that he resolved to dedicate himself to his subsequent way of life.

After a pilgrimage to Rome in 1206, he renounced his patrimony and quit his father's home. Conceiving it to be his mission to teach humility and love of the poor by example, he clothed himself in the poorest of habits and took up the life of a mendicant. In his wanderings he taught, prayed, performed menial tasks, even cared for lepers, although there had been a time when he fainted if he so much as saw a leper. At Monte Alverno, on September 17, 1224, his biographers record, while praying, he received the stigmata of the wounds of Jesus Christ.

Saint Francis began to establish his order in 1208. When it had grown to twelve members, he sought and obtained papal approval of their organization. In 1212 he formulated its simple constitution. The vows of chastity, poverty and obedience were obligatory on members. Poverty was held to be most important, and the ownership of property, either by the order or by the individual members, was forbidden. The movement spread rapidly and in 1219, 5,000 members attended its first general assembly.

A wave of intense religious emotion followed the founding of the organization. Soon a second order was established for women. Later another, the Third Order of Saint Francis, was established for those who were unable to drop all home ties for full participation in the movement. Saint Francis, himself, continued his itinerant work at the same time that he supervised the progress of the order. In keeping with his precept of humility, he made no effort to enter the priesthood. He was known for his great love of animals and is usually painted with them. He died near Assisi on October 3, 1226. Two years later he was canonized by Pope Gregory IX.

## SAINT THOMAS-AQUINAS

Saint Thomas Aquinas, the "prince of scholastic philosophers," had more influence on the thought of the Western Church than any other theologian except the bishop, Saint Augustine. He was born in Naples about 1225, and after attending the university there he joined the Order of Saint Dominic, much against the will of his family. Saint Thomas was the ideal scholar, at one time he studied under the Bavarian philosopher, Saint Albert the Great, who was his close friend. He taught both in Rome and in Paris and produced a remarkable synthesis of past philosophical thought. In 1274 he was summoned to a General Council at Lyons held for the purpose of reconciling the differences between the Greek and Latin churches. He died en route on March 7.

All of the writings of Saint Thomas were in preparation for his one great work, the *Summa Theologica*, a monumental handbook on ethics, religion and metaphysics. The book was begun in 1265 and completed after his death according to his plan. He was canonized in 1323.

## GENGHIS KHAN

Genghis Khan ("Mightiest Ruler") was an Asiatic conqueror. The American general Douglas MacArthur has said that nowhere can the fundamentals of war be learned better than from the history of this Mongol emperor who 700 years ago won by conquest the most extensive empire in world history. Extending from the Pacific to the Black Sea, it included the greater part of the known world at that time and more than half of its population. The military system developed by Genghis Khan had many of the characteristics of "total war." It was said that he never lost a decisive battle, although his forces were frequently outnumbered. Much of his success depended on the speed of his soldiers, their ability to outmarch the enemy and the intensity and concentration of their attack.

Genghis Khan, born about 1162 was originally called Temujin. His father was poisoned, and he determined to succeed him as chief of the nomad tribes. His struggle toward this goal was filled with many daring adventures and narrow escapes. He refused to share his power and mercilessly killed those aspiring to do so. When his cousin, Jamuga, who had been a true friend, was not content with a subordinate position, Genghis Khan ordered him strangled to death.

At last Genghis Khan was proclaimed Khan of the United Mongol and Tartar tribes. He then claimed to have a divine call to conquer the world. Many of his most famous deeds took place during the last sixteen years of his life. In 1209 he penetrated the Great Wall of China. Peking was taken in 1214. In 1218 he invaded Turkestan, conquered Persia a century after Omar Khayyám had written of its beauty, and pushed on as far as central Europe. In 1225, although he was more than sixty, he marched at the head of his army to subdue north-western China, whose king had sheltered two of his enemies. He died on August 24, 1227, at the height of his power.

## MARCO POLO

The Venetian gentleman Marco Polo was the most celebrated traveler of the Middle Ages. His account of his journey was entitled *The Book of Marco Polo*. It was promptly translated into several languages and for centuries it comprised the only knowledge that Europeans had of the extreme East. Its author was accused of gross exaggeration, but the accuracy of his observations has been proved. Eugene O'Neill, American dramatist, in the foreword to his play *Marco Millions*, says that the work is an attempt to render poetic justice to a traveler unjustly world-renowned as a liar.

Marco Polo left Venice with two other members of his family in 1271 and reached China in 1275. The famous emperor Kublai Khan accorded many honors to the foreigners, even giving Marco the administration of a city for three years.

and employing him on several missions. The Venetians eventually returned home in 1295, after traveling all over Asia. Three years later Marco Polo commanded a vessel in an unsuccessful war against Genoa and was taken prisoner. While in jail he dictated his book. Little is known of his life after he was released from prison. He was born about 1254 and died in 1323.

## DANTE ALIGHIERI

Although Dante Alighieri preceded the Renaissance as it is sometimes dated, he was one of the intellectual harbingers of that golden age. This most illustrious of Italian poets was born in Florence, in May, 1265. Of his boyhood we know little more than that, when he was nine years old, he met "Beatrice," his love for whom was to become the inspiration of his life. He was a studious youth and it was at an early age that he set himself the task of mastering all the sciences of his time. He seems also to have become skilled in art and music, and he took an active interest in public affairs.

With the publication of his first great work, *Vita Nuova* (The New Life), Dante took first rank among Florentine poets. In this selection of the lyric poetry of his youth and early maturity, he tells the story of his spiritual awakening through his love for Beatrice. Other works such as the *Convivio* and *Canzoniere* (short poems) added to his stature as a man of letters but only much later appeared his supreme achievement, the *Commedia*, an epic poem, which is known as *The Divine Comedy*. As poetry, it is unique, its verse structure, called *terza rima*, a creation of his own, never has been tried successfully by any other poet. The language is simple and noble. Its story is less important than its philosophy, in it the poet summed up the wisdom of his age and all the aspects of medieval Christianity.

Dante also played a leading role in the political life of his time. When he was thirty he became a member of the govern-

ing body of Florence which was then an independent city-state with a quasi-republican form of government. The rivalry between political factions was intense and Dante's party met conspiratorial opposition by banishing the dissidents, a usual punishment in Renaissance Italy. In 1301 the tables were turned and Dante and others were condemned to exile. Fourteen years later the exiles were permitted to return but only on condition that they make public show of penitence. This Dante refused to do. Instead he continued his wandering, afflicted by poverty and suffering. Eventually he found refuge in Ravenna where, on August 14, 1321, he died.

## GEOFFREY CHAUCER

Geoffrey Chaucer, the "Father of English Poetry," was a man of affairs as well as a poet. He was born in London, about 1340, the son of a vintner. In his twentieth year he went to the wars in France and was taken prisoner. The king, Edward III, contributed to his ransom and it is probable that he undertook to educate him and prepare him for civil employment. By his marriage in 1367 he ultimately became a relative of one of the king's sons, John of Gaunt, whose favor he enjoyed for many years. It was on the occasion of the death of his patron's wife in 1369 that Chaucer produced, in her honor, *The Book of the Duchesse*.

In the decade between his thirtieth and fortieth years Chaucer several times traveled abroad on diplomatic missions of the king. One of his journeys took him to Italy where he met the poet Petrarch. This period was for him one of great prosperity. Besides receiving annuities from the royal household he held a remunerative public office. With the accession of Richard II, his pensions and offices were confirmed and he was advanced to still more lucrative positions.

In 1386 he was elected a knight of the shire from Kent, but thereafter his fortunes receded. In the same year he was superseded in his offices. In the following year his wife died and a

year later, through force of circumstances he surrendered his pensions. The return of his patron John of Gaunt, from Spain in 1389 brought about an improvement in Chaucer's condition, but he never again enjoyed prosperity. On October 25, 1400, he died. He was buried in Westminster Abbey and his tomb became the nucleus of what is known as Poets' Corner.

Some of Chaucer's writings have been lost or destroyed. Those that remain include his version of Boccaccio's *Filostropho*, namely, *Troilus and Criseyde*, the *Legende of Good Women*, and his most famous work, *The Canterbury Tales*, a splendid picture of the life of his time, with a deep understanding of human nature.

## JOHANNES GUTENBERG

The German printer Johannes Gutenberg was the inventor of printing with movable type. He received a minimum of publicity. His name does not appear on any production of his press; his friends and patrons did not mention him in connection with his invention, and there is no genuine portrait of him known, since those which appear upon medals, statues or engraved plates are regarded as fictitious.

Nothing is known about Gutenberg's early life except that he was born about 1397 in Mainz. His real name was Gensfleisch. In 1434 he was in Strasbourg, where he signed a contract with several men to teach them the art of printing. When one of the men died, the partnership was dissolved, and Gutenberg returned to Mainz. There he was financed by a goldsmith, Johann Fust, who eventually withdrew his support when Gutenberg failed to pay his debts. He died at Mainz at the beginning of 1468. The *Mazarin Bible*, which was finished in 1456, is generally accepted as the first book printed on the press financed by Fust and the first book known to have been printed with movable type. More than any other invention, this means of printing hastened the spread of knowledge and made modern democracy possible.

## FRANÇOIS VILLON

Although a large part of his life was passed either in prison in exile or under sentence of death, the French poet François Villon succeeded in composing verse that has won for him a place as one of the most exquisite lyric poets of the Renaissance. He undoubtedly deserved his reputation as a rogue, but he was nevertheless well loved by the Paris of his day. Villon whose real name was François de Montcorbier, was born in 1431, it is almost certain that his birthplace was Paris. He took a bachelor's degree in 1449 and a master's degree in 1452.

On June 5, 1455, Villon became involved in one of the first of his many notorious street fights during which daggers were drawn and one of the party was killed. Villon was banished from Paris, but the sentence was remitted in January of the next year. During this period of exile, Villon is reputed to have had a disgraceful love affair with the abbess of Pourras. It is not known whether a woman mentioned simply as "la femme Isabeau" was the actual cause of the first brawl, but Catherine de Vaucelles, who is mentioned in Villon's poems, was definitely the cause of a second brawl near the close of 1456. This time he was so severely beaten that he decided to leave Paris, but before doing so he became involved in the stealing of 500 gold crowns from the chapel of the College of Navarre. The theft was not discovered for some months, and it was more than a year before Villon was convicted of the crime. Again he was exiled. Vagabond years followed during part of which he may have been a member of a wandering gang of thieves. He was in prison in Orleans, sentenced to hang, but by good luck was released on July 17, 1460. Again imprisoned in 1461, he was pardoned by Louis XI.

In 1462 the poet returned to Paris, where he was soon arrested for theft. Lack of evidence caused the authorities to revive the Navarre affair. Although the culprit was released on bail, he was re-arrested because he was found in the vicinity of a street quarrel. After having been tortured and kept in prison for over a year, he was once more condemned to die. On January 5, 1463 the sentence was commuted to ten years.

banishment, and here Villon disappeared from history. The poems he left, in which medieval Paris lives again, consist of *Le petit testament*, *Le grand testament*, direct and sad, and some miscellaneous works, mostly ballads. Villon has been the subject of many romantic stories and plays, among them the popular *Vagabond King*.

## JOAN OF ARC

In her short life Jeanne d'Arc, a French peasant maid, led her nation to victory over a foreign invader and placed her chosen king upon his throne. She was born to a humble, devoutly Catholic family in the town of Domrémy, on the banks of the Meuse, on January 6, 1412. Her early childhood was in no wise extraordinary, her education consisted of little more than her prayers, the lives of the saints and customary household training. But while she watched her father's sheep, she thought sadly of the state of her unhappy country.

Joan of Arc, as she is known to us, was twelve years old when she reported that she had heard the voice of God and that she had been chosen to lead the dauphin, the lazy Charles, to possession of the throne which English kings long had been attempting to seize in a series of struggles known to history as the Hundred Years' War. Voices and visions, from which she took counsel and guidance, continued for several years while she prepared herself for her great mission. At first everyone mocked her.

Early in 1429, after overcoming the many obstacles which skeptical theologians and military officers had placed in her way, she obtained an audience with Charles and convinced him that her call was genuine. Then, given the command of an army, she put on armor and drove the English from the city of Orleans, which had been besieged, and from Reims, where the dauphin was crowned as King Charles VII. French patriotism, long asleep, again awoke under Joan's leadership.

In 1430 the Maid of Orleans was captured by the Burgundians, who had allied themselves with the English. Her

enemies planning the destruction of her influence as well as the elimination of a powerful adversary proceeded to seek her condemnation by a spiritual court. Consequently she was tried by a panel of theologians, found guilty of heresy and sentenced to life imprisonment. The English, however demanded her death. It was a simple matter for her judges to find her a witch, and on May 30, 1431, in the market place of Rouen, she was burned at the stake.

## SAVONAROLA

Girolamo Savonarola, Italian religious reformer, turned his thoughts to the church because of a disappointment in love. As a boy, Savonarola, who was born on September 21, 1452, was well acquainted with medieval learning, and his family wanted him to be a physician. He left home secretly in 1475 and joined the Dominican order. In 1482 he was sent as a teacher to San Marco monastery in Florence. Savonarola, who was horrified at the corruption he found in both state and church, soon became a popular preacher and fascinated the Italians by his denunciations of their vice and wickedness. San Marco was under the favorable patronage of the powerful Lorenzo de' Medici, whose repeated attempts to conciliate Savonarola were in vain.

After Lorenzo's death Florence drove out the Medici and Savonarola saved the city from harm when it was occupied by King Charles VIII of France. From the chaos the reformer emerged as practically the dictator of Florence, and under him it became a city of quietly-dressed people who renounced worldly enjoyments and sang psalms rather than dissolute ditties. He encouraged committees of children and disciples to search for and destroy frivolous books and songs, music and works of art of evil tendencies. This "burning of the vanities" resulted in the loss of some valuable material.

Savonarola's efforts to reform the church brought things to such a pass that he was excommunicated and Florence was threatened with an interdict. His uncompromising attitude had

made him enemies. The citizens were becoming weary of puritanism. a pestilence had broken out, many of the Medici followers had been killed, and Florence was unpopular throughout Italy. These and other grievances added up to such ill will against the reformer that he had to be protected by an armed guard while he preached. He finally offered to submit to the ordeal by fire to prove his Christian motives, and a Franciscan friar volunteered to undergo the ordeal with him. The Franciscans never had any intention of carrying out the test. When it did not take place, the infuriated populace, deprived of their show, blamed Savonarola and called him an impostor and a coward. A mob attacked San Marco with stones and flames. Savonarola was arrested, accused of heresy, tortured for days and finally condemned to be hanged and then burned. This sentence was executed on May 23, 1498. A few faithful women spirited away his heart, which the fire had left whole.

## MACHIAVELLI

Niccolò Machiavelli completed his most outstanding achievement, the writing of *The Prince*, in 1513. This famous book is an analysis of the methods by which an ambitious man may gain and retain power, a subject on which Machiavelli's career had afforded him unequalled opportunities for observation. Its theme—that weakness is the only crime—has made “Machiavellian” a familiar word in modern-day language. The Italian statesman and writer was born in Florence on May 3, 1469. He entered public life there in 1494 and four years later became secretary of the republic and second chancellor, a position which he held until 1512.

Machiavelli formed his opinions concerning politics and Europe during his trips as Florentine envoy to the small Italian courts and to the capitals of European nations. Upon his return to his native city in 1503, after serving as an envoy to the duke of Romagna, Cesare Borgia, Machiavelli developed his interest in military affairs, and in 1506 he was appointed secretary to a special department created for the purpose of pro-

viding a militia for Florence. During the next few years he reached the height of his success, but also made many enemies, and on November 7, 1512, with the restoration of the Medici family to power in the city, he was dismissed from office. A year later he was tried for conspiracy against the Medici because his name had been found on a list of possible sympathizers with a republican plot, but he was found innocent.

Machiavelli retired to his farm near San Casciano about twelve miles from Florence and devoted his time to literary pursuits. Without his income from the state, he found it difficult to support himself and his family. He first wrote verses and comedies, the best known of which is *Mandragola*. Then he turned to more serious writing. This was the period of *The Prince*, that glorification of political expediency and war, and of another book in the political field, *Discourses on Livy's Decades*, and also of seven books on the *Art of War*. In 1520 he was commissioned to write a history of Florence. This history was the first attempt in any language to trace the vicissitudes of a people's life in their logical sequence.

Although Machiavelli's career in public life was virtually closed in 1513, in 1521 he resumed official work for the state and was sent on one or two small missions. In the spring of 1526 he was also employed in supervising the fortification of Florence. He died in Florence in June 1527.

## CHRISTOPHER COLUMBUS

The discoverer of the New World Christopher Columbus, left few records by which we can trace his early life. There is evidence that he was born in Genoa, Italy, in 1451, that he studied at the University of Pavia, and that he went to sea at an early age. Once, while on a voyage to England, his vessel was attacked by pirates and he found safety in Lisbon whither he returned after the completion of his mission. It was there that, in 1478, he married the daughter of a capable navigator whose charts and maps later helped him in the development of his theory of a westward approach to Asia.

Entering the service of King John II, of Portugal, he tried to enlist the ruler's support for his idea. After four years of fruitless effort, he went to Spain where, ultimately, King Ferdinand and Queen Isabella agreed to subsidize an expedition. On August 3, 1492, arrangements completed, Columbus set sail with three small ships—the *Santa Maria* which he commanded, the *Niña* and the *Pinta*—and eighty-eight men.

For ten weeks Columbus held to his westward course while his men lost faith and grew mutinous. At last, on October 12, they arrived at an island which Columbus named San Salvador (now identified as an island in the Bahamas) and claimed as a possession of Spain. He found other islands nearby, one of them being the island of Haiti. On January 3, 1493, he sailed for home. In Spain a triumphal parade was held and he was received at the court with highest honors.

Columbus made three more journeys to the New World. But, victimized by intrigue and harassed by disputes among greedy and ambitious colonists, his life thenceforward was filled with bitterness and discouragement. On his second trip he discovered Jamaica and the Caribbean Islands. His third voyage resulted in the discovery of Trinidad and the mainland of what is now Brazil, near the mouth of the Orinoco River. From this expedition he returned home in chains, the victim of scheming perjurers. He was released and in 1502 he set out again, this time touching at Cape Honduras and Puerto Bello. On November 7, 1504, he returned home to stay, broken in health, impoverished, and betrayed. He died in Valladolid, May 20, 1506, to his last day believing that he had reached India, and applying the designation, Indian, to the aborigines of the lands he discovered. His remains, removed several times, now rest in Seville Cathedral.

## AMERIGO VESPUCCI

The Italian merchant and adventurer Amerigo Vespucci, for whom the New World was named, was credited for several

centuries with having been the first to see the continent of America, but the general weight of opinion today is that he had no share in its discovery. Vespucci was born in Florence on March 9, 1451. He became a clerk in the commercial house of the Medici and resided a great deal of the time in Spain at Cadiz or Seville, where he was probably an agent for the business in that country.

Unlimited opportunities were offered to the adventurous by the exploratory expeditions being undertaken, and Vespucci claims to have sailed with one such expedition on May 10, 1497. This is the voyage in question—which it is now believed he did not make—but if he had, and if his account of it had been trustworthy, he would have reached the mainland of America on June 16, 1497, eight days before John Cabot, an English explorer who arrived on the North American continent on June 24, 1497. Vespucci claimed to have made three other lengthy voyages, in one of which he reached the mainland of South America, before his death on February 22, 1512.

## LEONARDO DA VINCI

Leonardo da Vinci is unique in history because he was not only one of the greatest artists of all time but also because he had one of the most inquiring minds. He was painter, sculptor, architect, musician, engineer, and natural philosopher. Although he lived years before Francis Bacon, he understood the principles of scientific experimentation better than Bacon did; he knew what such men as Galileo and Isaac Newton would some day discover and it is probable that if he had been in possession of some power such as gasoline, he would have completed his work on aviation, so remarkable for that time.

Leonardo, born in Italy in 1452, was the natural son of a Florentine lawyer. His early studies in music and art were in his native city, where he was for a time under the patronage of the Medici. Cautiously he kept his opinions to himself, recording them only in mirror writing. In art he was a student of

nature, he was a superb draftsman: and he was the first painter to recognize the significance of modeling by means of light and shade. He had already embarked upon observation and experiment in all fields of science when he left Florence towards 1485 to serve the prince of Milan.

Leonardo's masterpiece *The Last Supper* was begun about 1494 and finished about four years later. It was painted in tempera on a wall of the convent church of S. Maria delle Grazie at Milan. Because the tempera did not long adhere to the plaster and the plaster flaked from the wall, the picture has almost vanished. Many efforts to restore it did more harm than good, yet enough remains for its power to be manifest. Another product of his years in Milan was the model for an equestrian statue of the founder of the house of Sforza. When the city was invaded by the French, and the prince taken prisoner, the model was destroyed by French crossbowmen, but some of the designs have been preserved.

In 1499 Leonardo left Milan for Venice, he went from there to Florence. Among his works in Florence, where he scored an immediate triumph, were drawings for an altarpiece for the Church of the Annunziata, and his study of a woman, *La Gioconda* (the *Mona Lisa*), which he finished four years later. In this famous painting facial expression was carried to its greatest perfection. He also served Cesare Borgia as military engineer, although Leonardo thought war barbaric, and made the drawing for a battlepiece to decorate a wall of the city hall but the painting itself was never finished. It exists today in a copy by Rubens, it shows Leonardo's mastery over movement. From 1506 to 1513 Leonardo lived mainly in Milan. In 1513 he went to Rome, where he was again under the patronage of the Medici. The last two and a half years of his life were passed in the services of the French king, Francis I. He died on May 2, 1519. The *Virgin of the Rocks*, the *Madonna Benoitte*, and the *Virgin and Child with St. Anne* are undoubted paintings of Leonardo's. Many others once attributed to him are now ascribed to pupils.

## MICHELANGELO

Michelagnolo Buonarroti, the sculptor, painter, and architect, who signed his name as 'Michelangelo,' was born near Florence, Italy, in 1475. At the age of thirteen after he had overcome his proud father's opposition, he was apprenticed to the artist Ghirlandaio, who taught him painting. Later he began his study of sculpture under the patronage of Lorenzo de' Medici (Lorenzo the Magnificent) ruler of Florence. The poetry of Dante and the preaching of Savonarola influenced his whole life.

The death of Lorenzo in 1492, and ensuing political disturbances, compelled him to flee first to Bologna then to Rome, dreading assassination. Returning to Florence in 1501 he began work on his colossal marble *David*, which he completed three years later. In 1505, in Rome, Pope Julius II commissioned him to execute for him a gigantic monumental sepulchre. The artist's plans were approved but intrigue and other commitments caused the project to be delayed, so that it was forty years later that it was completed on a reduced scale. Its great figures of *Moses* and the *Slaves* (or *Captives*), still stand.

The first interruption in his work on the Julius tomb was the task of decorating the Sistine chapel. This, too, was delayed, and it was not until 1512 that Michelangelo was able to finish the ceiling which in a series of panels—unsurpassed in all art—illustrated the scriptural story of the world from Creation to the Deluge. In 1541 he completed the decoration with a fresco entitled *The Last Judgment*, which is not only the largest painting in the world but an expression of superhuman force and terror.

In his late years under Pope Paul III. Michelangelo was appointed chief architect of St. Peter's Church for which he remodeled the original designs. The dome, as it stands is largely his creation. Although he never considered himself an architect, he also built a bridge across the Tiber, converted the baths of Diocletian into the magnificent church of Santa Maria degli Angeli, and built the Laurentian Library of the Medici.

His boundless, furious energy which, together with his unequalled technical mastery and grandeur of expression, was reflected in all his works, remained with him almost to the day of his death. At the age of sixty his friendship with Vittoria Colonna began, which inspired him to write poetry. He was eighty-nine years old and had served prominently under nine popes when he died on February 18, 1564. Among his finest works, not mentioned above, are the sculptured figures for tombs of Lorenzo de' Medici and Julian de' Medici, in Florence, the *Madonna and Child*, at Bruges, Belgium, the *Pietà*, in St. Peter's, Rome, and the bas-relief of the *Holy Family*.

## BALBOA

Vasco Núñez de Balboa, the discoverer of the Pacific Ocean, made his expedition of discovery in an attempt to placate his sovereign, King Ferdinand V, who had summoned him to the Spanish court to answer grave charges. Balboa was born in Spain in 1475 and went to America to seek his fortune when he was twenty-five. After an exploratory trip to Central America, he settled in Haiti and became a planter. His undertaking was so unsuccessful financially that he fell deeply into debt, and in order to escape his creditors he decided to join an expedition bound for the settlement of San Sebastian on the South American mainland. He concealed himself in a large cask and was carried off his plantation and placed aboard one of the expedition's vessels. San Sebastian was found burned to the ground, and so great was the need for all able men that Balboa's shortcomings were forgotten, and he was admitted to the force's membership as a common soldier. When the entire adventure seemed doomed to failure, he showed his qualities as a leader. At his suggestion the colony was transferred to Darien, where the settlement was more successful.

In 1513 Balboa received the summons to return to Spain, and he resolved to win Ferdinand's favor by some outstanding

service. He left Darien on September 1 with 190 Spaniards (among whom was the future conqueror of Peru, Francisco Pizarro), 1,000 natives, and a pack of bloodhounds. On the twenty-fifth or twenty-sixth day of that month he reached a summit from which he viewed the body of water that seven years later was named the Pacific Ocean by Fernando Magellan, but which Balboa called the South Sea. On September 29 Balboa arrived on the shore and took possession of the land and seas in the name of Spain. For this he received the title of *Adelantado of the South Sea* and became the governor of Panama and Coyba, but he was replaced at Darien by a bitter enemy, Don Pedro Arias de Avila.

Balboa made many expeditions—some say as many as twenty—to the Pacific, but this only increased the jealousy and enmity of Don Pedro. The Spanish government attempted to bring about a reconciliation, and it was even arranged that Balboa should marry Don Pedro's daughter. On the occasion of another disagreement, however, Don Pedro tricked Balboa into delivering himself up. Balboa was thrown into prison and trumped-up charges of treason were lodged against him. He was tried, convicted and beheaded in 1517.

## MAGELLAN

The Portuguese navigator Fernando Magellan, born about 1480, was the discoverer of the Straits of Magellan, the first to sail across the Pacific Ocean and the first to attempt circumnavigation of the globe. Magellan was brought up as a page boy in the court of Queen Leonor, consort of King John II of Portugal. Under John's successor, King Manuel I, Magellan rendered distinguished service in the Indies and in 1513 joined a Portuguese expedition bound for Morocco. In Morocco Magellan was wounded—lamed for life. A charge of trading with the Moors led to the disfavor of King Manuel, subsequently Magellan renounced his nationality and offered his services to Spain.

Magellan believed that the Spice Islands of the East Indies could be reached by sailing westward and around the tip of South America. After many delays he set sail from Seville on August 10, 1519, with a fleet of five vessels, on what has been called the most romantic voyage in history. In November of 1520 he completed the passage through the straits that now bear his name. It was a stormy trip and when he came out on the smooth waters of the ocean he gratefully named it the Pacific. However, in spite of the good sailing, the long trip across the vast ocean brought Magellan's worst fears to pass. There were insufficient provisions, little water and rotten biscuits. The crew was ravaged by scurvy and reduced to eating ox-hides, sawdust and rats. On April 7, 1521, the squadron arrived at Cebu in the heart of the Philippines. Magellan was betrayed by the native sovereign, who professed Christianity in order to utilize his Catholic friends. Magellan undertook an expedition to a neighboring island to conquer the natives for the Catholic faith and for the king of Cebu. He was killed by the natives there on April 27, 1521. After the king of Cebu had murdered several more leaders of the squadron, the Spaniards escaped from the Philippines. Thirty-one men of the original force finally succeeded in reaching Seville in the *Victoria*, the first ship that ever made a voyage around the earth.

Although Magellan did not live to complete personally this momentous achievement, which ranks in importance with the discovery of America, he has received just rewards in history. His name is listed with the world's great explorers, and the largest ocean still bears the name which he gave it. Magellan accomplished what Christopher Columbus had planned—the connecting of western Europe with eastern Asia by direct transit over the western ocean. More than that he had proved that the earth was round and that America was not a group of islands or a peninsula reaching south from Asia but a continent in its own hemisphere.

## CORTES

Hernando Cortes, the Spanish soldier who conquered Mexico gave up the study of law to seek a life of adventure. Mexico had been discovered but not settled when Cortes was appointed to conquer the country. His expedition landed in Mexico on March 4, 1519. His artillery, ships and horses, all new to the natives, inspired them with such awe that they regarded the Spaniards as gods and sent them presents. After founding Vera Cruz and being elected captain-general of the colony, Cortes burned all his ships and went into the interior. He defeated the army of the independent republic of Tlaxcala, enrolled it into his own small force and continued to the city of Mexico, where Montezuma, the emperor, received him with honor, believing him to be a descendant of the sun. The Spaniards, in their turn, were deeply impressed by the magnificence of Montezuma's court, the fabulous wealth of the city and the horror of the human sacrificial rites practiced by the natives.

Cortes had just fortified himself in one of the palaces when he received word that Montezuma had dispatched a force to kill his followers remaining in Vera Cruz. When the head of one of the Spaniards was brought to Mexico City, the illusion of their invulnerability was destroyed and it became necessary for Cortes to act quickly and drastically. He took Montezuma prisoner and forced him to turn over to the Spaniards all soldiers who had participated in the attack on Vera Cruz. He burned them before the palace gates. In the meantime, a Spanish force had landed in Mexico to deprive Cortes of his command. By the time he had defeated them and returned to the capital, he found that the natives had revolted. Montezuma was killed by his own people, and the new emperor drove the foreigners from the city. They suffered heavily until they were able to give battle with a victory and recapture Mexico City.

The fame of Cortes in Spain reacted first in his favor and then as the court at Madrid began to fear his ambition and popularity, he was deprived of some of his power. Eventually, worn out by the struggle with the court powers, he returned to

Spain and served as a volunteer in an expedition against the Algerian pirates. It was an unsuccessful campaign, and henceforth Cortes was so neglected that he finally retired from court, his proud spirit hurt by some real and some imaginary wrongs. He was born in 1485 and died near Seville on December 2, 1547.

## PIZARRO

Francisco Pizarro, the discoverer and conqueror of Peru, was born in Spain about 1471. He was an illegitimate child, and facts about his early life are little known. One account says that he was left as a foundling at a church, while another says he would not have survived had he not been nursed by a sow. At any rate he obviously was poorly cared for, and received a meager education. His first occupation was that of a swineherd. Pizarro was in the New World in 1510. In 1522 he, together with a priest, Hernando de Luque, and a soldier, Diego de Almagro, undertook an expedition down the west coast of South America. On the second trip a few years later they learned definitely that there were great resources in the country. Pizarro and his followers landed on the island of Gallo, and Almagro returned to Panama for assistance. The men had suffered so much that the governor sent a boat to take them back to Panama. Pizarro drew a line on the sand with his sword and said that to all who crossed it would come hardships of every kind, but that wealth and fame would also be theirs. Thirteen men crossed to stand by Pizarro's side. The wealth which these men found they took back to Spain to Charles V, who gave Pizarro permission to conquer and govern the new territory. One of the provisions of this grant, however, was that Pizarro should raise within six months a force of 250 men. At the end of that time he had less than the required number, and fearing that his expedition would be prevented, he slipped away from Spain before the authorities found out the true state of affairs.

Pizarro embarked from Panama in January, 1531, with a force of three vessels and 185 men on the real conquest of Peru. When they arrived they found a civil war in progress. Pizarro captured the successful combatant and later released him for a ransom of \$8,000,000. When this news reached Europe it served to bring new men to Pizarro's side. He was made a marquis, and in 1535 he established Lima as the capital of his possessions. Discord between Pizarro and Almagro, which finally led to open warfare, brought about Pizarro's death. Almagro was captured and killed, and his friends, reduced to extreme poverty and goaded by hate and jealousy, formed a conspiracy to kill the marquis in his palace in Lima. He was assassinated on June 26, 1541. Pizarro never married, but had two children by an Inca princess.

## PONCE DE LEÓN

Juan Ponce de León was a Spanish explorer and discoverer who searched for the fountain of youth and found Florida. He was born about 1460 and first made his way to the New World in company with Christopher Columbus on that voyager's second trip. He undertook the conquest of Porto Rico in 1508 and in 1510 became the governor of the island.

The Indians apparently talked about an island called Bimini, and there was a story current in Europe about a fountain whose waters would guarantee youth. So in 1513 Ponce de León set sail to find Bimini, on which he hoped to discover the miraculous spring. He sighted land on Easter Sunday, March 27, and named it Florida after the Spanish name Pascua Florida, meaning "flowery Easter." The spot at which he landed was just north of modern St. Augustine. He returned to Porto Rico and did not undertake another expedition until 1521. He was severely wounded by an Indian's arrow and was carried back to Cuba, where he died, not knowing that Florida was a peninsula of a great continent and not an island.

## COPERNICUS

The Polish astronomer Nikolaus Copernicus was born on February 19, 1473, at Toruń in Prussian Poland. He studied mathematical science at the University of Cracow, acquired some skill in painting, listened to astronomical lectures in Bologna, gave lectures himself in 1500, entered medical school in 1501 and took a doctor's degree in canon law in 1503.

In addition to these activities, Copernicus found time to formulate a new system of astronomy. A treatise setting forth his theory that the sun, and not the earth, is the center of the universe was practically finished in 1530, but he did not consent to its publication for ten years. The first printed copy reached his home in Frauenburg barely in time to be laid on the writer's death bed. He was stricken with apoplexy and paralysis in 1542 and died on May 4, 1543. He was fortunately unaware that the initial effect of the work to which he had devoted his life was marred by a preface, inserted by the German reformer, Andreas Osiander, insisting that the reasoning introduced in the treatise was purely hypothetical.

## MARTIN LUTHER

Leader and symbol of the Protestant revolt against the Catholic Church in Germany, Martin Luther was the first reformer to cause a large number of people in western Europe to break openly with that church. He was born in Prussian Saxony on November 10, 1483, and after graduating from the University of Erfurt, he became a monk. Two years later he was ordained a priest and subsequently was appointed professor of theology in the University of Wittenberg.

Luther's break with the church began in 1517. He had evolved his own doctrine of salvation, opposing the granting of "indulgences," or promises of remission of punishment which might be meted out to a person after death. It had been the custom of the church to grant such boons to those who gave money to the church. When papal agents arrived to preach on

indulgences. Luther posted on the church door ninety-five theses, offering to debate them with the envoy. Two years later, in a sermon, he denied the doctrine of papal infallibility and asserted the right of every individual to interpret the Scriptures as he saw fit.

In 1520 Pope Leo X excommunicated Luther and requested Charles V, the Holy Roman Emperor, to punish him as a heretic. Luther, however, was able to defy both pope and emperor. For a year he remained in seclusion and in that time he made a translation into German of the New Testament, the inspiration of the Reformation. Then he set about organizing his new church. He spoke to the people in their own language instead of Latin which had been used so long. His doctrines included the renunciation of celibacy and asceticism and, in 1525, he married Katharina von Bora, a nun who had become one of his followers.

In 1555, after a protracted period of civil war in Germany between Catholics and Lutherans, the religion of the latter was given official recognition as a legal form of worship but each German prince was empowered to choose the church to which he and his people would belong. Protestant churches were set up in many places, especially in northern Germany and in Scandinavia. Luther died on February 17, 1546, leaving Christendom divided into two opposing camps.

## SAINT IGNATIUS DE LOYOLA

A broken leg was the indirect medium by which Saint Ignatius de Loyola, founder of the Society of Jesus (or Jesuits), was transformed from a tough soldier into a devoted priest. Ignatius, who was born in Spain in 1491, grew up in the court of Ferdinand and Isabella, rulers of Castile and Aragon. A cannon ball gave him the broken leg while fighting in their army. During his long convalescence he read a life of Christ and was thereby converted to a new way of living.

Ignatius gave his court garb to a beggar and put on sackcloth. His numerous hardships during the next few years which were

fraught with misunderstanding for his zeal, ended finally in Paris, where he took his Master of Arts degree in 1535. Meanwhile he had gathered around him a group of followers to whom he gave his *Spiritual Exercises* and who formed the nucleus of the Society of Jesus. These spiritual soldiers assembled on August 15, 1534, taking the vows of poverty and chastity. The little band was organized in 1539 and officially established as a religious order by Pope Paul III on September 27, 1540. At Ignatius's death its membership had increased to 2,000, its workers scattered over the whole world. Ignatius remained in Rome to write the *Constitutions* of the order. He died on July 31, 1556, was beatified in 1609, canonized in 1622. The Society of Jesus was a good deal like the modern Salvation Army. Its greatest achievement lay in stimulating education.

## HENRY VIII

The six marriages of Henry VIII, king of England, were not solely romantic adventures; there were also political complications which were at least in part responsible for the king's frequent change of wives. Henry was interested in the greatness of England and in his own pleasure. By coincidence his personal aims at times forwarded the cause of the nation. He was born on June 28, 1491, and succeeded to the throne in 1509. His first marriage, made during the early months of his reign, was to Catherine of Aragon, an aunt of the German emperor.

Catherine was his brother's widow, nevertheless the union lasted for eighteen years before the possibility of its illegality began to trouble Henry. His concern was further aggravated because there was no male heir to the throne and because he was in love with one of the ladies-in-waiting, Anne Boleyn. In 1533 his marriage to Catherine was declared null and his secret marriage to Anne made public a few days later. Since these decisions were not recognized by the pope, the latter's authority in England was set aside by an act of Parliament, and Henry

was declared supreme head of the church in England. Thus was accomplished the ecclesiastical revolution which distinguished the reign of Henry VIII. His rule was also notable for improvement of English naval power, the complete union of Wales with England, the conversion of Ireland into a kingdom, Henry's patronage of the arts, and his development of the parliamentary system of government.

Anne Boleyn, whose child was to be Queen Elizabeth, was condemned to death in 1536 on charges of adultery. Her successor was Jane Seymour, who became the mother of Edward VI and died a few days after his birth. Henry's happiness over a male heir was somewhat dimmed by sorrow over Jane, but he soon resolved to marry again. The lord high chamberlain Thomas Cromwell, recommended Anne of Cleves. The marriage proved unnecessary politically and, more important to Henry, Anne was unattractive physically. Besides, he was in love with Catherine Howard. Anne was divorced, and Cromwell was beheaded despite his piteous pleas for mercy. The second Catherine, of whom Henry was genuinely fond, proved untrue and was brought to the block in 1542. Henry's sixth wife was Catharine Parr, a lady of merit and a patroness of learning. She continued at the king's side until his death on January 28, 1547.

## FRANÇOIS RABELAIS

The date of the birth of the French author François Rabelais varies with different authorities between 1483 and 1495. He entered a Franciscan monastery in 1519, where he studied and read widely. After leaving there he entered the Benedictine brotherhood for a short time. He cultivated all the sciences of his time and eventually took the degree of Doctor of Medicine. He was in Montpellier, in Lyons, in Rome and in Paris at various periods of his life, and to his home, wherever it was, came the learned of his day. He was generous with his money and his medical skill. His death is supposed to have occurred on April 9, 1553.

The literary monuments of Rabelais are *Gargantua* and *Pantagruel*, which together form a great humorous story. Of the first edition of *Pantagruel* Rabelais said more copies were sold in two months than of the Bible in nine years. In his books Rabelais permitted himself unusual frankness of language and imagery. The Sorbonne censured his works and the Parliament at one time suspended their sale. Yet they have lived because of the wide human sympathy and fun that they contain.

## BENVENUTO CELLINI

The piquant life of Benvenuto Cellini, Italian artist, was a series of brawls and flights, intrigues and enmities, imprisonments and reconciliations, love affairs and escapes therefrom—a pattern studded with the brilliant gems of his own creative genius. His father and mother had been married for twenty-one years before the boy was born on November 1, 1500, the name Benvenuto means “the welcome one.” Although the elder Cellini wanted his son to be a musician, taught him to play upon the flute, the lad took no pleasure in music and was apprenticed to a goldsmith at the age of fifteen. He had already attracted attention in his native city of Florence when he became involved in a brawl and was forced to flee to Siena, where he was apprenticed to another goldsmith.

Cellini took up residence in Rome in 1519 and entered the service of the pope who had the greatest admiration for his talents, and for whom he made a brooch on which a diamond was set to represent a throne on which God sat surrounded by angels. The artist's life was once more interrupted by violence when he avenged his brother's death by killing the murderer. Next he was forced to leave Rome to escape the consequences of a fray with a notary. He was not reinstated as engraver of the Mint until the ascension of a new pope, Paul III. The plots of a natural son of Paul III forced Cellini to retreat to Florence and Venice, but he was restored once more. Several years later he was imprisoned on charges of embezzling gems from the pontifical tiara; there must have been insuffi-

cient evidence to support the accusations because he was released. He passed some time at the court of Francis I of France but the intrigues of the king's mistress so disgusted him that he retired to Florence in 1545. He died there on February 14, 1571.

Among Cellini's noted works of art now in existence are a bronze statue of *Perseus Holding the Head of Medusa*; a bronze *Nymph* made for Francis I, coins for the papal and Florentine states, two silver reliefs in the Vatican Library, Rome; bronzes for doorways; a saltcellar of gold and enamel, made for Francis I, and a medal of *Cardinal Pietro Bembo*, now in the Metropolitan Museum, New York. Many of his creations have been destroyed. He began his autobiography in Florence in 1558, this book is one of the most singular and fascinating in the world, showing him as the most boastful artist who ever lived, yet a most attractive rascal. He also wrote treatises on the goldsmith's art, on sculpture, and on design. One of Cellini's best points was his tremendous respect for Michelangelo.

## TITIAN

Venetian richness of color and joy in material things reach their height in Titian. In his first paintings, under the influence of Giorgione, an earlier Venetian painter, his treatment of form is still timid. Later there is increasing fervor and boldness—his rapid brush strokes foreshadowing modern French technique.

Tiziano Vecellio, called Titian, was born at Pieve di Cadore, in the Venetian Alps, about 1477. He studied with Giovanni Bellini at Venice, then entered Giorgione's studio. Between 1514 and 1519 he was at Ferrara working at the brilliant court of Alphonso d'Este, husband of charming, notorious Lucrezia Borgia. He returned to Venice but in 1529 was called to Bologna by Emperor Charles V, whom he portrayed several times, once on horseback—a model for subsequent equestrian portraits. He also did portraits that are penetrating psycho-

logical studies such as those of Pope Paul III, and *The Man with the Glove*. Titian painted classical and allegorical subjects, too, of which *Sacred and Profane Love* is a supreme example, and religious paintings like the *Assumption of the Virgin* and *The Entombment*. He died at Venice on August 17, 1576.

## JOHN CALVIN

The reformer John Calvin, whose companions nicknamed him the "Accusative," was a Frenchman, born on July 10, 1509. He found early that his main interests were religion and theology, although at first he did not accept Protestant opinions. He gradually entered the ranks of Protestantism, to which he rendered the services of systematizing its doctrine and organizing its ecclesiastical discipline. Persecution of Protestants was severe, and for several years Calvin led a nomadic life. In 1536 he became a leader in the reformation of the church at Geneva. His work there was punctuated by an interval in Strasbourg, during which he married. Calvin died in Geneva on May 27, 1564.

The reformer was involved in many disputes, all of which he prosecuted with zeal. One resulted in the breaking up of a very warm friendship. Another ended in his opponent's being banished from Geneva. The most notable incident involved Michael Servetus, a man whose views Calvin held in abhorrence. Servetus was imprisoned by Calvin's order and after a trial was burned at the stake.

## JOHN KNOX

John Knox, who was born about 1505, was the leading spirit of the Reformation in Scotland. He became an avowed reformer in 1542, and by 1547 he was recognized as a powerful preacher against papacy. As a result of his religious views he was at one time imprisoned in France, where he served as a

galley slave for nineteen months. After his release he lived in England and then in Geneva, where he was burned in effigy as a heretic.

In 1559 Knox returned to Scotland. When civil war broke out between the papists and the reformers, he was the leader of the latter group. After the intervention of England established the reformed religion in Scotland in 1560, comparative peace reigned until Mary, Queen of Scots, ascended the throne. Then there were frequent controversies between Knox and the Crown, during one of which he was arrested for treason. He was utterly fearless, and his vehemence in public discourses constantly caused him trouble, bringing him a turbulent career that contrasts strongly with his naturally prudent peaceful disposition. He died on November 24, 1572. *The History of the Reformation in Scotland* is the most remarkable of the books that he wrote.

## QUEEN ELIZABETH

Elizabeth, the daughter of England's King Henry VIII and Anne Boleyn, the second of his six wives, was born on September 7, 1533. When Henry had his marriage with Anne Boleyn declared invalid and had Anne beheaded, Elizabeth, then three years old, lost her claim to the throne and her legitimacy as well. A few years later, however, an act of Parliament, subsequently confirmed in Henry's will, declared her next in succession after her younger brother, Edward, and her elder sister, Mary.

Early in her life Elizabeth acquired a firm Protestantism and a faculty for statesmanship. During the five-year reign of her sister she was prudent enough to accept Catholicism when it was made law. She once was imprisoned, but soon after was restored to the queen's good graces. Her proximity to the throne constituted a danger to her life in those times and she observed a discreet retirement.

Mary's death on November 17, 1558, and Elizabeth's accession to the throne, were the occasion for rejoicing by many.

Englishmen, for Mary's reign, with its foreign entanglements and bloody persecutions at home, had not been a popular one. Elizabeth, the most purely English sovereign in 500 years, seemed to promise a new era of national self-expression. Her subsequent rule in part fulfilled those promises. Under her, English diplomacy freed itself from foreign domination, it was during her reign that England's reputation as a naval power was established when, in 1588, the English navy, with the aid of a mighty, providential storm, defeated the Spanish Armada, and English literature reached its greatest heights.

Elizabeth, endowed by nature with handsome features, was accomplished and witty, a magnificent dancer. Neither her ministers nor her people could induce her to marry. Gossip had it that a physical defect precluded the possibility of marriage. The horrible psychological conditions surrounding her childhood are a more likely cause. There were, however, several favorites with whom her name was linked. Most famous of those was the Earl of Essex who was thirty-three years her junior. This affair was a stormy one and ended with his execution after he had apparently attempted an insurrection. Still single, and lonely, she died on March 24, 1603.

## MARY, QUEEN OF SCOTS

The popular conception of Mary, Queen of Scots, is that she was a young and beautiful girl, cruelly condemned to die by a merciless woman, Queen Elizabeth. Actually Mary had at one time schemed to take the throne of England from Elizabeth and plotted against that queen's life, crimes punishable then, as today, by death. Mary, the daughter of King James V of Scotland, was born on December 7, 1542. Her father died soon after she was born, and when she was still a small child, Mary was sent to the court of France. There she was educated by the best tutors, trained in the Roman Catholic faith and betrothed to the eldest son of the king of France. When he was fifteen and she was sixteen, they were married with elaborate ceremony at the cathedral at Reims. Upon the French king's death

a year later, the young couple ascended the throne. It was at this period schemes were made to secure the crown of England.

After the death of her husband, Mary returned to Scotland. She married her cousin Henry Stewart, Lord Darnley, but refused to grant him the title of king. Their marriage was an unhappy one. Darnley, jealous of Mary's confidential secretary, an Italian named Rizzio, had him killed. There was a brief period of reconciliation when their son was born on June 19, 1566, but the next year the house where Darnley lay ill of small-pox was mysteriously blown up while Mary was at a ball. It is believed that he had been warned of the danger and attempted to escape. He was found dead in an adjacent garden. Mary's part in this was never entirely proved, but everyone suspected one of her advisers, the Earl of Bothwell. Three months later she married Bothwell and the Scottish lords, long discontented, rose in revolt. They besieged Bothwell's castle, from which Mary escaped in boy's clothing. She was captured, however, and severely mistreated, threatened with assassination and forced to abdicate. She escaped from prison with the help of a sixteen-year-old page boy. She organized an army, which was soon defeated, and then fled to England and threw herself upon the mercy of Queen Elizabeth. She remained in prison for the rest of her life. Shortly before the Spaniards attacked England she was found guilty of plotting Elizabeth's assassination and condemned to death. The execution took place on the morning of February 8, 1587. One account says that Mary, dramatic to the last, wore a black robe to the scaffold, which when removed, revealed an under robe of brilliant scarlet.

## SIR WALTER RALEIGH

Sir Walter Raleigh, English statesman, explorer and author, was born in 1552 near Budleigh Salterton Bay. Political service in Ireland gained him favor with Queen Elizabeth. He was knighted in 1584 and in that year began a series of colonizations in the New World. His first body of colonists landed on

Roanoke Island, North Carolina, the following year. After several unsuccessful attempts at establishing colonies, Sir Walter abandoned this project. He was in disgrace because of an affair with one of the queen's maids of honor, for which he was imprisoned. But this did not last long. In 1595 he made his first voyage to South America to look for gold. Upon his return the queen partially forgave him and he wrote *The Discoverie of Guiana*. The following year he took part in the destruction of a Spanish fleet at Cadiz. After Essex's downfall, Raleigh was once more in complete favor with Queen Elizabeth.

During the reign of James I, Raleigh was accused as an accomplice in conspiracies against the government. He was sent to the Tower of London on July 19, 1603, and sentenced to death. While in prison he wrote the one published volume of his *History of the World*. After fourteen years he was released upon his claim that he could find gold in South America without entrenching upon the Spaniards settled there. However, he failed to avoid conflict with them and, upon his return to England, was executed for piracy on October 29, 1618.

## WILLIAM SHAKESPEARE

The greatest figure in English literature, William Shakespeare, was an intellectual rebel against the highly restrictive conventions of a decaying feudal system. A lusty, sometimes bawdy, purveyor of popular entertainment, his peculiar qualities of wisdom, wit, imagination, pathos and, above all, deep knowledge of essential, universal Man, have caused his works to become enshrined as a pattern of perfection, departures from which are accepted most guardedly.

Of the man very little is known with any degree of certainty. His very existence has been questioned by some scholars. However, it can reasonably be accepted as a fact that he was born at Stratford-on-Avon in the year of his baptism which was registered on April 26, 1564. It is probable that his only formal education was received at a free grammar school in the town. Only guesses trace his life between that time and his marriage,

at the age of eighteen, to Ann Hathaway who became the mother of his three children. At twenty-two, he joined the Blackfriars Theater in London, whose company acted under royal patronage. A year later he became its proprietor. He seems to have prospered, for in 1597 he bought some land and the principal house in Stratford.

In the years between 1590 and 1610 he wrote and produced most of his plays. Comedies and histories were the main product of the first decade, tragedies of the second. In the whole period he wrote most of the thirty-four plays that are ascribed to him. It was during that time, also, that he wrote most of his poems—two long narrative pieces and at least 154 sonnets. Examples of Shakespeare's comedies are *The Merchant of Venice*, *Merry Wives of Windsor*, *A Twelfth Night*, and *As You Like It*; *Richard III*, *Henry IV*, *Julius Caesar*, and *Antony and Cleopatra* are among the best known of the histories, while the great tragedies include *Hamlet*, *Macbeth*, *Othello*, and *King Lear*.

His works were highly regarded during his lifetime but his extraordinary genius was not given universal recognition until many decades had elapsed. Now his works are accorded superlative rank in several of the foreign languages into which they have been translated. It was a productive and highly significant life that was ended with his death at Stratford on April 23, 1616.

## FRANCIS BACON

Sir Francis Bacon, Baron Verulam and Viscount St. Albans, was a philosopher, statesman, and author. He was born in London, January 22, 1561. After being admitted to the bar in 1582, Francis Bacon advanced rapidly to a seat in Parliament. He was befriended by the Earl of Essex, but (for a fee of £1200, it is said) he betrayed that friendship by serving as one of Queen Elizabeth's attorneys in Essex's trial for high treason. Bacon's speeches were influential in obtaining the Earl's execution.

Bacon was knighted upon James I's succession to the throne, his progress in politics was more rapid, and eventually he became lord chancellor, the head of the English legal system. Within three years he was accused and convicted of taking bribes. Later he was pardoned but not restored to Parliament or to the court. He then turned to writing and philosophy, winning new and permanent fame. He died on April 9, 1626.

Bacon's personality was paradoxical, he was capable of composing a brilliant work such as *The Advancement of Learning* and then presiding in the king's torture chamber. His *Novum Organum*, written in 1620, was the most famous prose work of the age. The method of scientific experimentation which it outlined is in common usage today. The name *Novum Organum* means "The New Instrument," and Bacon indicated by this name that he was presenting a new method of logic to supplement the method described by Aristotle in his treatise on logic, the *Organon* (known in Latin as the *Organum*).

In his *New Atlantis*, Bacon described an ideal State. His short *Essays* are probably better known than his other works.

Many controversies have arisen over the claim, advanced from time to time, that Bacon wrote some of the plays which we know as Shakespeare's. There is no foundation for these claims.

## DESCARTES

René Descartes, philosopher and pioneer in modern mathematics, was born in the Touraine province in France on March 31, 1596, and was sent to a Jesuit school at the age of eight. He was never a professional mathematician, but rather a scientist-philosopher. In 1628 he settled in Holland. He soon became very popular. The last few months of his life were passed in Sweden teaching his philosophy to Queen Christina. The queen preferred her lessons at five o'clock in the morning. These early hours and the severity of the Swedish winter proved fatal to the none-too-robust philosopher. He died in Stockholm on February 11, 1650.

Descartes had a passion for clarity and logical deduction and at the same time was a loyal Catholic attached to traditional theology. This paradox was resolved into a system of thought which gained Descartes the designation of father of modern philosophy. His system of dividing the world into the separate entities of the body and the soul is known as the dualistic system and is the basis for two divergent theories of current thought—materialism and idealism. As an amateur mathematician he invented analytic geometry and published it as an appendix to a book of philosophy.

## CERVANTES

Spain's most eminent contribution to universal literature Miguel de Cervantes Saavedra, lived and wrote in the period of his country's greatest intellectual and political power. The novelist was born in 1547 (the exact date is not known) in New Castile, of noble, but not wealthy parents. He was educated at the University of Salamanca and later at Madrid. His formal studies were impeded by his propensity for versification but privately he read far beyond the limits of his curriculum.

When he was twenty-one he went to seek his fortune in Rome. In the following year he enlisted as a private for the relief of Cyprus which was under siege by the Turks. In the Battle of Lepanto he received a wound which left him without the use of his left hand. In 1575, returning to Spain, he was captured by the Moors and for five years he was held prisoner in Algiers. Four years after his release, he married and settled in Madrid.

In 1584 his first novel *Galatea* was published, winning moderate praise. At about this time he wrote several dramas none of which was favorably received by the critics. The first part of his *Don Quixote* was published in 1605. It was an immediate success. One of the greatest novels in all literature, it depicts a comic clash of dreams and reality. Although Cervantes had written it to "expose to the contempt they deserved, the extravagant and silly tales of chivalry," his sympathies

were patently with the dreamer. Several years later there appeared a spurious sequel to the novel, which Cervantes repudiated. In 1615 he presented his own sequel which, contrary to general rule, was deemed by many to be greater than his first part. It won universal applause.

Throughout most of his later years he received financial assistance from powerful friends and thus was kept from actual want although he remained almost a pauper to the end of his life. He died on the same day that Shakespeare did, April 23, 1616.

## EL GRECO

No one ever painted the tortured soul of Spain better than her adopted son El Greco, with his elongated forms and rapt faces. He was a Greek, born on Crete about 1541, and his real name was Domenico Theotocopuli. Yet he was a modern, we must not expect to find in his paintings the calm of ancient Greek artists like Phidias and Praxiteles. He belongs rather with mystic painters such as William Blake and Vincent Van Gogh and mystic reformers such as Loyola, the Jesuit.

Little is known about his life. In 1570 he was in Venice, Italy, and must have studied with some Venetian painters, probably Jacopo Bassano and Titian. He settled at Toledo, Spain, about 1575 and remained there until his death, April 7, 1614. Among his finest works are flame-like religious compositions such as *The Trinity*, *The Coronation of the Virgin*, *The Crucifixion*, *The Agony in the Garden*, twenty paintings showing *St. Francis*, *The Burial of Count d'Orgaz*, and remarkable portraits such as *Brother Felix Hortensio Palavicino* and *Cardinal Niño de Guevara*, also several breathtaking landscapes of the country around Toledo.

## GALILEO

Although his father attempted to confine his son's interest to the field of medicine, Galileo Galilei overheard by accident

a geometry lesson which turned his attention to mathematics. The Italian astronomer was born in Pisa on February 15, 1564. While studying medicine he had discovered the isochronism of the pendulum, i.e., the regularity of its beat, which he applied to timing the human pulse. As a mathematical lecturer at the University of Pisa, Galileo established the first principles of dynamics by demonstrating from the famous Leaning Tower that bodies of different weights fall with equal velocities. His sarcasm toward people who disagreed with this theory made him unpopular, and he resigned from the university in 1591. In 1592 he was appointed to the chair of mathematics in Padua.

Galileo's telescopic discoveries were his most important contribution to science. On January 7, 1610, the astronomer completed a telescope, less powerful than our opera glasses today, with which he saw Jupiter's satellites for the first time. He also saw the spots on the sun, which showed that the sun revolved. In that same year he abandoned Padua for Florence and the following year he visited Rome with his telescope.

Early in his thinking, Galileo adopted the Copernican theory that the sun was the center of the universe, but fear of ridicule prevented his advocating it. In 1613, however, he adopted a more decided stand and the papal authorities took notice of discrepancies between this doctrine and some passages of Scripture. The scientist was warned not to hold, teach or defend the condemned theory. He was unsuccessful in obtaining a revocation of this decree, and finally, encouraged by his friends, he published in 1630 *A Dialogue Concerning the Two Great Systems of the World*, which brought down a storm on his head. Within three years he was summoned to Rome. Under threat of torture, which the authorities never intended to inflict, the old man recanted his statements. He was permitted to return to Florence where he passed the next eight years in seclusion, a prescribed condition of his comparative freedom.

The astronomer continued to study and work in spite of blindness, which came in 1637. He died of a slow fever on January 7, 1642.

## HENRY HUDSON

Records of the birth of Henry Hudson, navigator and explorer, have been lost. A written agreement between him and a group of Dutch merchants, in which he is referred to as "Henry Hudson, Englishman," settles the question of his nationality. He was probably about forty when he was placed in command of the *Half Moon*, a ship owned by Amsterdam merchants, and commissioned to find a north-east passage around Europe to the Far East. Hudson himself thought the western route more promising. The ship left Amsterdam on March 25, 1609. When it struck a solid ice-pack, the crew mutinied, and Hudson, knowing he could not reach China that way and deciding to follow his own plans, steered south and west. His courage was comparable to that of Christopher Columbus, for while he must have known that there was some sort of land to the west, he had no conception of its size nor of the size of the Pacific Ocean.

Four months later the *Half Moon* reached land which was described in the log book as "low white sandy ground." It is believed that Hudson landed at what is now known as Sandy Hook. Next the voyagers discovered a "great stream"—the river which now bears Hudson's name. His ship was the first to sail up its course, and to him belongs the honor of discovering and exploring it. At first he must have believed that it was a means of reaching China, since the tide flowed far inland and the water was salty for the first few days' sail. When he saw his mistake, he continued to explore, sending a small boat probably as far as Albany, New York. He traded for furs with the Indians and determined to try to appease his employers for not discovering China by telling them of the immense commercial value of the land he had found.

Hudson, however, considered his voyage a failure, since he had not found China. Finally he obtained another ship for a new expedition. This time he tried to go around the continent of North America by the northern route. The crew wintered in James Bay and then on June 22, 1611, the ignorant and frightened men set Hudson, his seven-year-old son and some

sick sailors adrift in a boat on Hudson Bay (which he had explored and which was later named for him) and took the ship successfully back to England. The boat of abandoned men was never heard from again.

## ROGER WILLIAMS

Roger Williams was as great a liberal as the founder of Pennsylvania, William Penn, but he was more impetuous. Williams, the founder of Rhode Island, was born in Wales in 1599 and died in Providence, Rhode Island, in April 1683. He was educated at Cambridge University, became a nonconformist minister, and came to the Massachusetts Bay colony in America in 1631. Elected pastor of the Salem church, his doctrines of religious toleration found little favor in the stern Puritan community. He was persecuted and driven from the colony in 1636. Making his way through the wilderness in mid-winter, he bought land from the Indians and began the settlement that he called Providence.

Williams' relations with the Indians were always friendly. He studied their languages and tried to teach them the Bible. On a voyage to England to procure a charter for his new colony, he wrote a *Key into the Language of America*. In London he published his book on tolerance, *The Bloody Tenent of Persecution for Cause of Conscience Discussed*. Williams was a friend of Milton, the English poet, and Oliver Cromwell, the Puritan leader.

## WILLIAM PENN

Penn was an English Quaker who founded Pennsylvania, one of the first commonwealths in America to establish religious toleration. William Penn was born in London on October 14, 1644. Because of his father's services to the Stuarts, he stood high in the favor of the king. In payment of a debt owed his father, Penn accepted the tract of land west of the Delaware

River which the king named Pennsylvania, meaning "Penn's Woodland" He drew up a plan of government for his colony and published *A Brief Account of the Province of Pennsylvania*, setting forth the advantages of settlement there perfect liberty to worship God, easy purchase of lands, and a democratic assembly

Penn visited his colony in 1682 He established fair treatment of the Indians, founded his capital city, Philadelphia, and promoted laws far in advance of his age in liberality and humaneness After two years he returned to England There, too, he worked for tolerance From 1699 to 1701 he was again in America He was imprisoned several times during his long, useful life Penn died at Rushcourt, England, on July 30, 1718

## RICHELIEU

Armand Jean du Plessis de Richelieu, French statesman, was described as a man whose chief ally was his own personality He was stern and august and possessed a will of iron Although he was not strong physically, his frail body wrapped in the red robes of a cardinal commanded respect and obedience even from those who hated and feared him He lived in splendor after his politics proved profitable financially. Richelieu was eager for literary fame, but his support of men of letters, notably Pierre Corneille, was more important than his own writings He founded the French Academy and erected buildings for the Sorbonne

Richelieu, born on September 9, 1585, was consecrated as a bishop in 1607, although he had to obtain a dispensation from the pope because he was under canonical age He was made a cardinal in 1622 He finally managed to insinuate himself into the favor of the queen mother, Marie de' Medici, and after a series of varying fortunes at court, he became chief minister of Louis XIII in August of 1624 For the next eighteen years he worked tirelessly to make the royal power, which was in reality his own power, absolute at home and abroad He succeeded in conquering completely and without serious opposi-

tion his two outstanding enemies in France: the Huguenots (French Protestants) and the feudal nobility. His power received an acid test, however, when Marie de' Medici turned against him, according to rumor, because of unrequited passion. On the occasion known as the "Day of Dupes" Louis led his mother to believe that he was going to dismiss Cardinal Richelieu, but in the evening he sent for Richelieu and assured him of continued support and favor. Since Marie de' Medici failed to be reconciled with the cardinal, she left Paris and was forbidden to return.

The next threat to Richelieu came from the king's brother, who was supported by Henri, the duke of Montmorenci. Richelieu had the duke sent to the block, thus executing a first noble of France and the last of a family famous for seven centuries. Abroad the cardinal's policy, a network of political intrigue aimed to weaken the enemies of France, was as inflexible as at home. The powerful minister died on December 4, 1642.

## OLIVER CROMWELL

Little is known of the early life of Oliver Cromwell, Lord Protector of England. He was born at Huntingdon on April 25, 1599. His education was under Puritan teachers. Although some biographers have credited him with being a wild and profligate youth, others assert that there was no foundation for this and that he was only boisterous and not extraordinarily studious. He probably studied law, and in 1620 he married. For some years he was unable to decide on his religious beliefs. Ultimately, however, he was completely converted, and for the rest of his life he was deeply pious. He was elected to Parliament in 1628, where he was more interested in matters pertaining to Puritan affairs than purely political issues. There were indications that he was early dissatisfied with the rule of King Charles I, and tradition has it that he once intended to immigrate to New England.

When the Irish insurrection of 1641 broke out, Cromwell proposed that Parliament should assume control of the militia.

and subsequently he became the recognized leader of the army. When that body clamored for the death of Charles, Cromwell at first hesitated but finally declared, "I tell you we will cut off his head with his crown upon it." He was the leader in all the events leading up to the king's execution on January 30, 1649. With the abolition of the monarchy, the Commonwealth was faced with a serious situation. In putting down the Irish revolt Cromwell ordered the massacre of a garrison of 2,800 men at Dublin, an act whose unhappy political consequences have continued to modern times. It was also necessary for the Scots to be coerced into obedience.

Then there remained the problem of establishing a permanent constitutional government. On December 16, 1653, Cromwell assumed the title of Protector, but his Parliamentary difficulties proved too great for him. He failed to transform the military state into a civil one, and on February 4, 1658, he dissolved his last Parliament. His conduct of the nation's foreign affairs has never been approved. He made England feared by force of arms, but he did not understand European politics. He died on September 3, 1658. The controversy which ensued upon the erection of a statue to his memory in Westminster in 1899 showed how deeply Englishmen felt even then about the questions of Cromwell's day.

## JOHN MILTON

Poet and publicist of the austere Puritan age, John Milton is usually regarded as the second greatest name in English literature, Shakespeare being the first. He was born in London on December 9, 1608. Shakespeare had just written *Antony and Cleopatra*, Raleigh was writing his *History of the World*. He was educated at St. Paul's School and at Christ's College, Cambridge. At an early age he had already read the classics of both English and Italian literature. The *Masque of Comus*, which some critics consider his finest short poem, and *Lycidas*, an elegy on a classmate who had died, appeared soon after he finished his schooling.

In 1639, Milton met Galileo in Italy. While he was touring the continent, news of the incipient rising of the English people against the arrogant King Charles I brought Milton home. In the twenty years of civil war that followed, he confined his talents to the writing of social, religious and political tracts, the greatest of these being *Areopagitica* a *Speech for the Liberty of Unlicensed Printing*.

As secretary for foreign tongues to the council of state in the government of Oliver Cromwell Milton wrote several books for circulation abroad, defending the English Commonwealth. In 1652 he became totally blind and was forced to give up most of his official duties, but he continued his writing of political treatises until 1660 when the return of Charles II caused the leaders of the Commonwealth to flee for their lives. Several of Milton's works were publicly burned and he was ordered arrested, but friends concealed him until the feeling against him subsided. Then, in retirement, he entered a new phase of his life, during which he wrote *Paradise Lost*, *Paradise Regained* and *Samson Agonistes*.

Milton, a prophet of social regeneration and creator of some of the most sublime and noble passages in all literature was unfortunate in his private life. Thrice married he had little happiness with any of his wives. The first was a shallow girl, utterly incapable of understanding her Puritan husband, the second, whom he never saw, seems to have loved him but she died after fifteen months, the third thirty years younger than himself, took care of him in his last years, but she did not come up to his exacting standards. His three daughters by his first marriage neglected him in his later days of blindness. They read aloud to him but rebelled against their task. He died on November 8, 1674.

## SAMUEL PEPYS

The English diarist Samuel Pepys was born in London on February 23, 1633, the son of a tailor. He was introduced into government employment by his cousin and by 1673 had become

secretary of the Admiralty In spite of his excellent work, he passed some time in the Tower of London under a charge of aiding in a conspiracy to kill the king, Charles II. He was released without trial and restored to his position in the Admiralty which he held until the revolution of 1688 He was president of the Royal Society from 1684 to 1686 He died on May 26, 1703

Although Pepys wrote other books, including *Memoirs of the Royal Navy* in 1690, he is best known for his *Diary* He began this on January 1, 1660, and abandoned it nine years later because of poor eyesight The diary, written in a sort of shorthand of his own, was not intended for publication It was deciphered and first published in 1825 It is a picture of the court and times of Charles II, one of the most diverting books in the English language In it we meet Pepys' wife, "poor wretch," his uncles, his father, his aunts, his servants, as well as the aristocracy, the clergy and many theatrical figures

## PETER PAUL RUBENS

Peter Paul Rubens, a Flemish painter, whose works express the ardor and exuberance of a supremely happy man, began the study of art early in life After some time in Flanders, he went to Italy where he stayed eight years, highly influential years in his career They came to a close after the death of his mother in 1608 when he returned to Antwerp. Here he married Isabella Brant and became painter-in-ordinary to the archdukes who were the sovereigns of his country Rubens was famous and wealthy. Among his prodigious works were vast religious compositions, the most noted of which may be seen in Antwerp In many of such conceptions the master was assisted by pupils

Rubens was a diplomat as well as an artist, and in 1627 he was entrusted with negotiating a peace between England and Spain The months he passed in Madrid were among the most important in his life because he met Velasquez, and during his

stay in England he received an honorary degree from Cambridge and was knighted. At fifty-three Rubens who had been a widower for four years, married a sixteen-year-old girl Helena Fourment, by whom he had five children. She was an admirable model and appears in many of his paintings. Rubens appears to be the chief exception to the usual rule that genius has a touch of abnormality. He was the sanest of great painters. The vivid color of his works and their sweep of lines make them beautiful patterns of decoration. Rubens was born on June 29 1577, and died at Antwerp on May 30 1640.

He painted many versions of *The Adoration of the Kings*, many portraits, the *History of Marie de' Medici*, now in the Louvre, Paris, *The Procession of Silenus*, *The Judgment of Paris*, *Autumn Landscape with View of the Chateau de Steen*, *The Garden of Love*, and *The Three Graces*.

## REMBRANDT

Rembrandt Harmensz van Rijn, born in Leyden on July 15, 1606, the son of a miller, determined early to become a painter. After studying in Leyden and Amsterdam, he returned in 1626 to Leyden. Rembrandt never went to Italy, but he owned paintings and engravings by Raphael and others. Among his first pictures just about the time that the Dutch were founding New Amsterdam that was to become New York, were religious subjects and portraits of his family and of some of the sturdy persons he saw about him. By 1631 his work was attracting the attention of Amsterdam art lovers, who urged him to move to that city. From then on, it was his home until his death.

In 1634 Rembrandt married Saskia van Uylenburgh, a fair-haired girl who served as the model for many of his pictures. Saskia was pretty and charming, bore him several children and was the center of his life until her death in 1642. During these years Rembrandt had many pupils and numerous commissions. He filled his large home with a wonderful collection of armor,

costumes, books, and works of art, which was later sold to his creditors for a very small sum. Following Saskia's death, bad days befell the artist. His best work was no longer recognized, yet his powers were at their height. Debts were ever present, and in 1654 he was involved in scandal when a child was born to his housekeeper, Hendrickje Stoffels. In 1656 he was declared bankrupt, and after the sale of his home, he retired with Hendrickje and his son Titus to an obscure part of the city, where he lived, poor and forgotten, until his death on October 4, 1669.

Rembrandt was outstanding in portraiture, both of individuals and of groups. In the first class notable examples are the *Man with a Magnifying Glass*, *The Man with a Gold Helmet*, a portrait of Hendrickje at the Metropolitan Museum; endless portraits of himself, several of Titus, his son; and one of an old woman, now at Leningrad. Among the group pictures are the masterpieces *The Anatomy Lesson*; *Sortie of the Banning Cock Company* (better known as *The Night Watch*), the *Jewish Bride*; and *The Syndics of the Draper's Guild*. Rembrandt also executed numerous paintings with mythological and religious subjects which reveal his mastery over dramatic light and shade, and deep feeling, of his landscapes, one of the best known is *The Mill*. In addition Rembrandt was probably the most wonderful etcher in the history of art. Among his etchings are: *Three Trees*, *Burgomaster Six*, *Christ Preaching*, *The Three Crosses*; *Christ Healing the Sick*, known as the "Hundred Guilder Print"; and *Christ on the Mount of Olives*. His countless drawings are an equally important part of his great work. They are sometimes so intense that they foreshadow Van Gogh.

## VELASQUEZ

Diego Rodriguez de Silva y Velasquez, a Spanish artist who helped to lay the foundations of modern painting through his supreme rendering of light and scientific approach, and who

is characterized as one of the greatest painters the world has ever known, was born in Seville and baptized on June 6, 1599. His education included language and philosophy, but upon his marked display of artistic talent, he received instruction in painting. *The Water-Carrier* is an example of his early work in Seville, where he gained position and fame. In 1623 Velasquez and his family moved to Madrid, where he enjoyed the patronage and friendship of King Philip IV for the rest of his life. In 1628 the Flemish artist Peter Paul Rubens visited Madrid, and Velasquez was appointed by the king to be the visitor's guide among Spain's art treasures. The next year Philip allowed Velasquez to make a trip to Italy, not only continuing his salary, but also giving him money for the journey. Velasquez did some pictures of his own while abroad as well as making copies of the works of famous Italian artists such as Michelangelo and Raphael.

In 1631 the painter returned to Madrid and continued as the court painter of King Philip. He executed many portraits of the king, members of the royal family, and the court. During this time, known as the middle period of his work, his outstanding pictures in addition to portraits were his great historical painting *The Surrender of Breda*, and a religious one *The Crucifixion*. Velasquez made a second visit to Italy with a commission to make purchases for an academy of art in Spain. The pope, who received him with favor, was the subject of a portrait which is a notable example of Velasquez's third manner of painting. In 1651 he returned to Spain and to court painting, creating a gallery of canvases of members of the royal household. The greatest of these is known as *Las Meninas*, a picture of the little princess Margarita Maria and her maids of honor. Philip made Velasquez a knight in 1659. This appointment protected the artist from the censorship of the Inquisition and made it possible for him to continue with his work. In 1660 he was placed in charge of the decorations for the wedding of the Spanish princess, Maria Theresa, to Louis XIV of France. He returned to Madrid on June 26 and on July 31 was stricken with fever. He died on August 6, 1660, and was buried in the church of San Juan.

## LOUIS XIV

Louis XIV, king of France, born on September 5, 1638, was known as the *Grand Monarque*. His reign, which began on May 14, 1643, when he was only four years old, is the longest one recorded in European history, surpassing even Queen Victoria's, and it has been styled the golden age of France. At the outset of his rule power lay in the hands of his mother and Cardinal Mazarin, the prime minister, who continued the work begun by Cardinal Richelieu. The nation was in a state of civil war, twice the royal family suffered the humiliating experience of flight from Paris. Peace eventually was secured at home and abroad and sealed in 1660 with the marriage of Louis XIV to the Infanta Maria Theresa, daughter of the king of Spain. Velasquez, great Spanish artist, handled all the details of this wedding as Grand Marshal. After Mazarin's death the courtiers asked Louis who was henceforth to be consulted about affairs of state, and he replied, "Myself." The famous assertion attributed to him—"I am the state"—proved to be literally true. His most important ministers found themselves under his control. His army had never been defeated, his diplomacy triumphed in every corner, France led the Continent in art, science and letters and prospered economically. Louis built a magnificent palace at Versailles that cost about 150,000,000 francs. Although his court was brilliant, filled with the learned and artistic geniuses of the day, and noted for its good manners, it was a by-word in scandal, presided over by a succession of the monarch's mistresses.

In 1667 began the series of wars that lasted almost throughout the reign of Louis XIV. The War of Devolution was followed by the Dutch War. Next Louis revoked the Edict of Nantes, an edict by which concessions had been granted to the Protestants in France and this revocation cost the country many of her best citizens and the Protestant alliances in Europe which had supported her. The war with the Grand Alliance, which lost France some of her frontier provinces, was followed by the War of the Spanish Succession. The close of this conflict saw France's humiliation and England's ascend-

ancy, France being saved from dismemberment only by the skill of Louis and his counsellors

The last years of Louis's reign were peaceful but gloomy. France was burdened with debt, and opposition to the monarchy was growing. Louis lost his eldest son, his eldest grandson, his great-grandson. He expressed regret for the sorrows which his love of glory had caused the French people. After Maria Theresa's death, he married the last of his mistresses, Madame de Maintenon, a pious woman, and under her influence the court lost its gaiety. Louis died on September 1, 1715. "He had a soul," said Montesquieu, "that was greater than his mind."

## SPINOZA

Baruch Spinoza, "The Gentle Philosopher," was born of orthodox Jewish parents, in Amsterdam, Holland, on November 24, 1632. Physically delicate as a child, he was retiring and studious in his habits. His early education was received from rabbis, who also taught him a trade—lens grinding—by which, for part of his later life, he supported himself. His intelligence, studiousness and saintliness made him welcome at the synagogue where he entered the discussions of groups of men much older than he.

Spinoza, in his quest for truth, wandered beyond the limits which were accepted by the spiritual mentors of his people, and he soon was admonished by them. In 1656, when he persisted in his philosophic exploration, he was excommunicated by the elders of the synagogue, a punishment which caused the doors of his erstwhile co-religionists to be shut to him. His friends and acquaintances were bound to ignore his very existence. Sadly, yet firm in his belief that he was following the true path to wisdom and righteousness, Spinoza accepted exile from his native city.

The heresy that brought upon him banishment from his people, the basic idea of his philosophy, was that God and the processes of nature are one, a belief known as Pantheism. He

looked upon the Jewish and Christian religions as the same, when unreasoning hatred and intolerant prejudice are laid aside. This philosophy, the rabbis warned, not only was an offense against God, but also would provoke the wrath of the Christians, who, in Holland, had hitherto allowed the Jews to live in peace. Nevertheless, Spinoza continued his studies and his work on his most important volume, *Ethics*, which he did not allow to be published during his lifetime.

Leaving Amsterdam, he settled in the small town of Rhynsburg. Later he moved to The Hague. In 1668, he received a small pension from the estate of a statesman who had been impressed by the philosopher's writings. Among other offers that were made to him was that of the chair of philosophy at Heidelberg, Germany, but he refused them all lest they endanger his independence. Among the slanders and accusations that were hurled at him, was the charge that he was an atheist and an Epicurean. Spinoza's life and work answered that and other charges, and he continued his pursuit of truth until he died on February 21, 1677.

## ISAAC NEWTON

Sir Isaac Newton, great English physicist, was born in Colsterworth on Christmas Day in 1642. When he was twelve he was sent to grammar school at Grantham. Here he had a successful fight with an older boy which aroused an ambition to excel. Although previously he had taken little interest in his books, Newton then rose to the leadership of his class. This period of education was short, however. When Isaac was fourteen his mother withdrew him from school to help her. He returned in 1660 to prepare for college, and obtained his B.A. degree from Trinity College in January of 1665.

It was a short time after that that the idea of applying the laws of gravity to the whole universe first occurred to the young scientist, but it was not until 1687 that the *Principia*, in which the theory was presented to the world, was published. This delay was caused in part by a lack of scientific data neces-

sary for Newton's calculations. The story that his train of thought was induced by the falling of an apple came from François Voltaire, French philosopher and author, who heard it from Newton's great-niece. Although the discovery of universal gravitation was his most prominent work, his researches on light were of tremendous importance to science. His chief accomplishment in this field was the analysis of the composition of light, which he announced as a combination of various rays causing different color sensations, white light being a mixture of all these.

In 1667 Newton was elected a fellow of Trinity College. His first reflecting telescope, with which he saw Jupiter's satellites, was made the following year. Four years later he was made a fellow of the Royal Society. After the publication of the *Principia*, Newton entered more actively into public affairs, until by 1699 he was master of the mint, a member of the council of the Royal Society and a Foreign Associate of the French Academy. Queen Anne knighted him on April 13, 1703.

In his eighty-fifth year Sir Isaac was presiding over a meeting of the Royal Society when he became ill. He died in Kensington on March 20, 1727, and was buried in Westminster Abbey.

## DANIEL DEFOE

The English writer Daniel Defoe, author of that lively adventure story *Robinson Crusoe*, was born in London in 1660 or 1661. He was an extremely versatile man. Trained for the dissenting ministry, he was always a reformer. Defoe's *Essay on Projects*, published in 1698, foreshadowed several commercial institutions developed a century later. *Six Dissenting Characters of a Parliament Man* denounced stock-jobbers. *Memoirs of a Cavalier* gave a vivid picture of the Thirty Years' War, and his *New Test of the Church of England's Loyalty* attacked the high church party.

Defoe was prosecuted for a satirical pamphlet called *The Shortest Way with the Dissenters*, was fined and sentenced to

stand three days in the pillory. He was so well liked for his honesty and manliness that the populace showered the pillory with flowers and drank to his health. Nevertheless he was imprisoned for two years. His *Hymn to the Pillory* sold in great numbers. In 1712 Defoe began to issue *The Review*, a biweekly journal, marking the beginning of English periodical literature and suggesting, later, the *Tatler* and the *Spectator*. To him we owe the newspaper interview and the editorial. The first edition of *Robinson Crusoe* appeared on April 25, 1719. It was followed by many other stories including *Moll Flanders*. Defoe died in London in 1731.

## JONATHAN SWIFT

Jonathan Swift, great English satirist and author of *Gulliver's Travels*, was one of the most tragic figures in eighteenth-century literature. He was born in Dublin, Ireland, on November 30, 1667, and entered Trinity College in that city at fifteen. Even at that age he was disdainful of regulations and received his degree only by special grace. In 1688 Swift became secretary to the English statesman and author Sir William Temple, a distant relative. This daily association with a man of culture was profitable to Swift, although he found his position so trying, being forced to eat at the servants' table, that he quarreled with Sir William and left his service. But he returned to his post, where he stayed until the statesman's death in 1699. Possibly one of the motives for his return was the presence of a local merchant's daughter, Esther Johnson, whom he called Stella, to whom he was attracted, and who loved him deeply. His first prose composition *The Battle of the Books*, written in 1697, betrayed his resentment against life, to which he seemed so unable to make an adjustment.

In 1699 Swift took up residence in Ireland as a preacher and soon became a political pamphleteer. *Tale of a Tub*, published in 1704, aroused doubts of his orthodoxy and harmed his ministerial reputation. As a Tory leader between 1710 and

1713 he was one of the most important men in politics and society. In 1713 he was appointed dean of St. Patrick's Cathedral in Dublin, where he remained throughout his life

Swift began the *Journal to Stella* in 1710. He wrote to her twice a day. In the meantime Vanessa, a girl who had fallen in love with Swift in London, had followed him to Dublin. His attentions to both girls reached a climax when Vanessa wrote to Stella. This precipitated a terrific quarrel between Vanessa and Swift, and a few weeks later she died. Swift married Miss Johnson secretly. After some years of great sorrow Stella died also. Between these two deaths the unhappy lover achieved his greatest literary triumphs. In 1724 the *Drapier Letters* appeared and next came *Gulliver's Travels*, written as a satire on England, but read by children as a fairy tale. During his last years he suffered extreme ill health, and insanity preceded his death on October 19, 1745. He was buried in his cathedral in the same vault with Stella. He left all his property to found an asylum for the insane

## EMANUEL SWEDENBORG

Emanuel Swedenborg was a Swedish scientist, philosopher, and religious mystic, born at Stockholm January 29, 1688. He toured Europe for several years coming home in 1715 to devote himself to science and engineering. The King of Sweden appointed him in 1716 as assessor on the board of mines and two years later he invented some military machines. He was far ahead of his time in many fields. His work in geology alone would have made him famous. In physics he anticipated the work of the German philosopher Immanuel Kant. Swedenborg invented an ear-trumpet and a flying machine. He knew that the latter needed improving before it would fly, saying, "Perhaps in time to come some one might know how better to utilize our sketch and cause some addition to be made so as to accomplish that which we can only suggest."

In 1745 a great change came over the scientist. He turned to spiritual matters, had visions, said that God had appeared to

him and chosen him to reveal divine truth. Swedenborg did not attempt to preach, but wrote his message to the world in his books, of which *Divine Love and Wisdom* is the most comprehensive. He died in London, March 29, 1772.

## PETER THE GREAT

Peter I, emperor of Russia, called Peter the Great, was a paradoxical personality. He was described as having been at heart profoundly religious, but many of his actions were savage and coarse. Personally he was addicted to the lowest vices, a man whose rages and loves were of extreme intensity. As a ruler he worked sincerely for what he believed to be the improvement of Russia. Peter was born on May 30, 1672. His earliest teacher was later the court fool. During a rebellion in 1682 Peter saw his uncle murdered by a mob, and one of his own friends was torn from his side and hacked to pieces. These outrages were probably responsible for the convulsions from which he later suffered. This was the year in which he became czar.

Peter was not interested at first in being czar. He loved shipbuilding, ship-sailing, drilling and sham fights, and under the guidance of a Swiss adventurer, François Lefort, he was initiated into dissipations and immoralities. A year after his marriage, he practically deserted his wife. Peter soon saw that Russia was way behind the rest of Europe. He therefore built an army and a navy and when they were strong enough he took Azov, an important fortress, from the Turks. In 1697 he set out on a trip through Europe, learning such things as gunnery, shipbuilding, anatomy, engraving and army organization. Wherever he went he engaged experts to take home with him. He was recalled to Russia by a revolt, which he put down with extreme severity. Then he began to introduce western habits into Russian life. Many of his subjects bitterly resented some of his reforms, which included making his people wear European clothes, cutting their beards (he personally clipped

those of his chief nobles), freeing the women from Asiatic seclusion, sending young Russians abroad, and making industrial and political improvements. One of his most shocking acts was the crowning of his consort, for a woman had never been crowned in Russia, and Catherine I was only a peasant and a servant.

Peter was not satisfied until he had secured a seaboard for Russia. This he did at Sweden's expense, acquiring the Baltic provinces, and the foundations for Saint Petersburg, Russia's new capital and first real port, were laid in 1703. In the meantime, he had lost his gains in Turkey. In 1724 he had an attack of paroxysms and died on January 28, 1725.

## JOHANN SEBASTIAN BACH

Johann Sebastian Bach, one of the founders of polyphonic music, came of a family of noted musicians. He was born at Eisenach, Saxony-Weimar, Germany, on March 21, 1685. Nearby was the Wartburg, the castle associated with Luther and with Wagner. Orphaned at the age of ten, he went to live with an elder brother whose envy of the boy's musical precocity caused bitter friction between them. In order to circumvent his brother's vigilant interference with his study, Bach had to resort to stratagems such as transcribing harpsichord scores by the light of the moon, after he had supposedly gone to sleep. This severely strained his eyes.

When Bach was fifteen he was thrown on his own resources by the death of his brother. Obtaining a place in the choir of a school at Lüneburg, he managed to support himself and extend his musical education. By intensive study he mastered violin, clavichord, organ and composition. In the course of his career he made numerous changes in position while he developed as instrumentalist and composer, seeking always the perfection that he felt he could never attain. He served in various posts at the court of the Duke of Weimar, at the court of Prince Leopold, of Anhalt-Cöthen, at St. Thomas's church school in

Leipzig, and at the court of Dresden, capital of Saxony. It was at the latter place that he wrote his Masses and other religious pieces, and at Leipzig he achieved his greatest fame as an organist

Bach was a deeply religious family man. He had seven children by his first wife, a cousin. A year after her death in 1720, he married a young woman with a good soprano voice, and had thirteen more children. Several of his sons also became musicians. His concern for the proper religious training of his offspring caused him, on one occasion, to give up a lucrative post and transfer to an inferior one. This religious outlook was reflected also in his music, for music to him was a means of worship. Among his compositions were the *Brandenburg Concertos*, the *Saint John Passion*, the *Saint Matthew Passion*, the *Well-Tempered Clavichord*, and the *B Minor Mass*.

A high point in his career was his visit, in 1747, after repeated invitations, to the court of Frederick the Great, who received him with great honor. The king had a collection of pianos which Bach was asked to try out. Two years after that, the composer's sight began to fail and soon he was completely blind. He died on July 28, 1750, at Leipzig.

## GEORG FRIEDRICH HANDEL

The composer Georg Friedrich Handel, who was born in Saxony, Germany, on February 23, 1685, would have become a lawyer if his elderly father had had his way. His passion for music was severely discouraged, and he was forbidden the use of musical instruments. Nevertheless, he managed to hide a small clavichord in the garret and practiced upon it at night when the family was asleep. After a duke had heard him play and put in a word for him, he was finally permitted to study music. In 1710 he made his first visit to England and was eventually naturalized as a British subject. He became blind in 1752, but remained active until his death in London on April 14, 1759. He was buried in Westminster Abbey.

Händel (or Handel) was described as a large, ungainly per-

son with coarse appetites, a rough manner and a vicious temper But his heart was kind, and he was undoubtedly a genius, even though some of his works exhibited flagrant plagiarism His compositions include more than two score operas and much sacred music, especially oratorios, of which the most famous is his oratorio *The Messiah*, written in the incredibly short period of twenty-three days *The Water Music* is almost equally well known

## FREDERICK THE GREAT

Frederick II, known as Frederick the Great, was a king of Prussia He was born on January 24, 1712 His childhood was so unhappy that he attempted to flee to England He was caught and not only barbarously treated by his father, but also forced to watch the execution of a friend who had helped him to escape His father finally gave him the town of Rheinsberg, where he devoted his time to study until he became king at his father's death on May 31, 1740 He was a voluminous writer and corresponded with the French philosopher Voltaire, whom he admired greatly

Frederick's reign was marked by the three Silesian Wars as well as several lesser conflicts During the intervals of peace he improved domestic conditions The great stroke of his foreign policy was the formation of the Confederation of German Princes At his death on August 17, 1786, his kingdom had been increased by 29,000 square miles, nearly 1,000,000 inhabitants and more than 70,000,000 Prussian dollars It had an army of 200,000 men, credit with all European powers and a reputation for industry, wealth and science Frederick had laid the foundations of militaristic Germany

## CATHERINE THE GREAT

Catherine II, empress of Russia, known as Catherine the Great, was born a German princess on May 2, 1729 Her

betrothal to Grand Duke Peter of Russia failed as a diplomatic intrigue, but Peter's aunt, the Empress Elizabeth, liked the girl, and the marriage was arranged anyway. She became Peter's bride on August 21, 1745. Her married life was miserably unhappy, for Peter was abnormal both physically and mentally, and Catherine despised him. She endured her marriage and kept peace with Elizabeth only for the power that would be hers as a result. Her private life was a scandal, and when, after ten years, she had a son, Paul, the chief reason he was accepted as Peter's was because of the strong resemblance between them. When Peter became czar at the death of Elizabeth, he threatened to divorce Catherine, declare Paul illegitimate and marry his mistress. Catherine, however, had her friends, and Peter was unpopular with the people. He was strangled, probably by Gregory Orlov, one of her lovers, and after his death Catherine ruled supreme from 1762 to 1796.

The administrative ability of this woman stands in contrast to the immorality of her private life. Her numerous love affairs were secondary to her political and intellectual life; she banished any one of her lovers who aspired to marry her. She read prodigiously and carried on a voluminous correspondence with the rulers of other countries and with learned men of the day, including the French philosopher Voltaire. Her conversation was reported to have been even more brilliant than her letters. She began writing a history of Russia and composed numerous comedies and tales. In order to find time for all of her interests she arose at five o'clock, made her own fire, and often worked fifteen hours a day.

Catherine's administration of Russia was in many ways a beneficent one, especially in the early years of her reign. But serfdom was increased rather than lessened, and many favors went to the nobility. She attempted to impose Western ideas and culture on her people until after the French Revolution, when she even prohibited the sale of French books in Russia. Her foreign policy resulted in a large increase in Russia's territory. Her extravagant and corrupt court made her unpopular in Europe during the latter part of her life. She died of an attack of apoplexy on November 10, 1796.

'My trade is to say what I think," said Voltaire, and what the "laughing philosopher" had to say made kings and popes listen—and tremble François Marie Arouet, known to us as Voltaire, was born at Châtenay, in the environs of Paris, on November 21, 1694. Educated by the Jesuits, he learned skepticism along with his religion. When he was twenty-three he was imprisoned in the Bastille for an insult he had uttered against the royal court. One of the first things he asked for in the Bastille was Homer's poetry. In prison he wrote *Henriade*, a long epic poem in which Henry IV tells Queen Elizabeth the story of Protestant persecution. Soon after his release he scored a great success with *Œdipe*, a tragic drama. Arrested again in 1726 for his outspokenness, he was exiled, passing three years in England.

Back in Paris, he once more dominated its salons. In 1734, however, publication of his *Letters on the English* caused a furore and he was forced to flee. Taking with him another man's wife, the Marquise du Châtelet—a scholarly lady who for fourteen years was to be not only his mistress but also an intellectual companion and rival—he fled to Lorraine. In 1746, having found it safe to return to Paris, he was elected to membership in the French Academy. During the next few years he wrote many of his celebrated novelettes, *Zadig* and *La Micromégas* among them.

In 1750, depressed by the death of his mistress the year before, and seeking solace in diversion, he accepted an invitation from Frederick the Great for him to come to the Prussian court. There he enjoyed almost idyllic surroundings for three years. Then, leaving his host, he set out for his beloved Paris, only to find, on his way, that he had been exiled again this time because of his most ambitious, most daring work, the *Essay on the Morals and the Spirit of Nations*—probably the first philosophy of history, in which he had attempted to analyze the natural causation behind the development of the European mind.

At Ferney, just inside the Swiss border, where he settled, he

wrote *Candide*, collaborated in the writing of the *Encyclopedia*, and wrote his *Philosophical Dictionary*. Then began a period in which he wrote countless pamphlets and leaflets assailing the bigotry and intolerance of the church. In his eighty-fourth year he returned to Paris once more and was greeted by enthusiastic multitudes. There he died on May 30, 1778, having had a large share in laying the foundation for both the American and French revolutions.

## JEAN JACQUES ROUSSEAU

The French revolutionary philosopher, Jean Jacques Rousseau, was born in Geneva, Switzerland, on June 28, 1712. He launched himself into the business world as a notary's helper and then was apprenticed to an engraver from whom he ran away and fled from Geneva.

Next came an extraordinary series of experiences which he recounts in his *Confessions*. He tells how, in the course of his wanderings, he became associated with a pretty young widow, Madame de Warens. Eventually he was established in her home as her lover. In 1738 he made a trip to Montpellier for his health and became involved in a new romantic affair. When he returned to Madame de Warens, he found his place occupied by another. After a few more years of varied experiences Rousseau went to Paris. He managed to make a living by copying music and doing secretarial work, and once more he set up a domestic establishment, this time with his mistress, Thérèse le Vasseur. She was not attractive in any way that his friends could discover, and she had a mother whom Rousseau detested, but apparently he was happy with her. Five children born to them were turned over to a foundling hospital—a curious fact in view of his writings on education and his preachings on the domestic virtues.

Rousseau made his literary mark with a contest essay whose subject was supposed to have been the effect of civilization on manners. He wrote on the superiority of the savage state and won the prize. In 1756 Rousseau was established in a cottage,

the Hermitage, near Montmorency. Here he wrote a novel, *La Nouvelle Héloïse*, and enjoyed the amorous attentions of another woman, Madame d'Houdetot. The *Social Contract* and *Emile* appeared in 1762. These three books angered a great many people, the church and the government persecuted him, and Rousseau was forced to leave France. He went to England, where he began his *Confessions*, and continued writing them on his return to France in 1767.

It is doubtful that Rousseau was wholly sane during the last ten or fifteen years of his life. He was obsessed with fears of secret enemies and worried by Thérèse's affection for a stable boy. *Rêveries*, written at this time, reveals him as a mournful spirit, repulsing all his old friends, taking solitary walks. Apoplexy was given as the cause of his death on July 2, 1778, although rumors were circulated that he was a suicide.

## JOHN WESLEY

In 1738 John Wesley, the English clergyman who founded Methodism, organized a group for week-day religious meetings which was named the "United Society." The inception of Methodism is generally dated from the beginning of this society. Wesley eventually became the sole leader of those who adhered to his beliefs, and he devoted his entire life to the group's organization. He was inspired by the sermons of Jonathan Edwards and paid a visit to the United States. By 1790 he was at the head of 511 preachers and a membership of 120,000.

Wesley's travels as an itinerant preacher to the poor, during which he sometimes preached four or five times a day and traveled 1,500 miles a year, were made on horseback until age forced him to use a carriage. He studied, read and wrote while making his trips, including in his literary output miscellaneous subjects ranging from grammars and biographies to an English dictionary and manuals on logic and medicine. He was described as a good talker and a charming man who was never ill at ease, and his numerous friends were found

among all classes. Wesley was born at Epworth, Lincolnshire, on June 17, 1703, and died in London on March 2, 1791.

## SAMUEL JOHNSON

Samuel Johnson's formal schooling ended when poverty forced him to leave college in 1731 without a degree, but his remarkable common sense and serious mind made him a lexicographer, essayist, and critic, and—for over twenty-five years—dictator of English literature. Johnson went to London in 1737. His *Life of Richard Savage*, a struggling poet friend, appeared in 1744, followed by a play, *Irene*, in 1749. He began the *Rambler*, a semi-weekly periodical, in 1750 and five years later published a *Dictionary of the English Language*. Its etymologies were untrustworthy but he illustrated words with such apt quotations that he became famous as a lexicographer. Still he was always in debt. The *Idler*, a publication similar to the *Rambler*, appeared in 1758. He wrote the novel *Rasselas* "in the evenings of a week" to pay his mother's funeral expenses.

In 1763 Johnson met James Boswell, who later wrote his biography; and soon after Johnson was one of the founders of the Literary Club, which included poets, historians, and the best talkers of the day. Johnson himself was known as a brilliant conversationalist. His literary career closed in 1781 with *Lives of the Poets*. He was born in Lichfield on September 18, 1709, and died in London on December 13, 1784. He was buried in Westminster Abbey.

## JAMES WATT

James Watt was a Scottish inventor who in 1765 discovered a practical steam engine that would work. Watt was a man of many interests and had many friends.

He was born at Greenock, Scotland, January 1, 1736. Apprenticed to an instrument maker in London, he returned to

Scotland and was appointed constructor of mathematical instruments in the University of Glasgow. While holding this position he made his great discovery. After his death on August 19, 1819, near Birmingham, England, a friend wrote that it would be difficult to estimate the value of the benefits which this invention had conferred upon the country. "It has increased indefinitely the mass of human comforts and enjoyments, and rendered cheap and accessible, all over the world the materials of wealth." Watt, a poor man himself, entered into partnership with a capitalist and set up works near Birmingham for the manufacture of engines. By the end of the eighteenth century they were as common as windmills. In 1817 Watt visited Scotland for the last time. In his eighty-second year he invented a machine for copying sculpture.

## DANIEL BOONE

Although the character of Daniel Boone, the pioneer and frontiersman, is described by the more conservative as being very different from that attributed to him in some sensational biographies, his life was marked by sufficient adventures and hairbreadth escapes from Indians to give rise to the Daniel Boone legend. He was born in Pennsylvania on February 1, 1735, and went with his family to South Carolina about 1748. He received only a meager education, and as a boy was fond of hunting and adventure. He married in 1755.

Boone became interested in Kentucky and embarked upon an exploratory expedition in 1769. After his companions had been scalped by the Indians Boone was left alone in the wilderness while his brother Squire returned to South Carolina for food and supplies. During this period Boone passed two years away from his home, neither tasting bread or salt nor seeing any human beings except his traveling companions and the Indians. In 1773 Boone moved with his family to southwestern Virginia and the next year he undertook to rescue a party of captives supposed to be held by the Indians in the Kentucky wilderness.

Four years later Boone and some friends were captured by the Indians while on a hunting expedition. All the others were ransomed, but the Indians refused to allow Boone his freedom. He was adopted by the Indian Chief after a painful but harmless ritual. He succeeded in making his escape in time to warn the settlers of Boonesborough of an impending Indian raid. Squire was killed by the Indians on another expedition in 1780, and Boone narrowly eluded them by shooting the Indian dog that was trailing him. Upon another occasion the intrepid adventurer effected his escape by blinding four armed Indians with tobacco juice.

When Kentucky was admitted to the Union, many families, including Boone's, lost their property through defective titles. Indignantly the Boones left for Missouri, where again there was trouble about the title to land. His wife died in 1813, and later he made his own coffin, which he kept under his bed until his death on September 26, 1820. He was the father of nine children, one of whom, Enoch, was the first white male child born in Kentucky.



## BENJAMIN FRANKLIN

Benjamin Franklin's occupations were almost encyclopedic: printer, journalist, philanthropist, scientist, inventor, statesman, and diplomat. The fifteenth child of a tallow-chandler, he was born in Boston, on January 17, 1706. At an early age he was apprenticed to his brother, proprietor of a print-shop and newspaper. In 1723, now an experienced printer, he left home, passing a year in Philadelphia and two years in London before settling in the former city where, in 1730, he formed a common-law union with Deborah Read.

By that time Franklin had become sole owner of the newspaper, the *Pennsylvania Gazette*, which he had helped to found. *Poor Richard's Almanack*, first published in 1732, added further to his fame. He was active in various civic and social projects such as the founding of the American Phil-

osophical Society, the establishment of a public library, and of what later became the University of Pennsylvania. He found time also to experiment in the fields of science and wrote many articles on his findings.

Concurrently with his other activities, Franklin held public offices such as clerk (later, member) of the Pennsylvania Assembly, and deputy postmaster at Philadelphia. In 1757 he was chosen to represent his colony on administrative matters at the court of King George III. This, and a subsequent mission, kept him in London for sixteen years during which he also assumed the representation of other colonies, published a small newspaper and continued his scientific studies.

He returned to America in 1771, a confirmed patriot, strongly supporting the ensuing war for independence. As a member of the Continental Congress, he helped to establish the new government. He also was one of the drafters of the Declaration of Independence. Later he was an envoy at Paris where he procured financial assistance for the states and made a profound impression upon the French; and at London where he helped to negotiate the peace treaty. As member of the Constitutional Convention and as president of Pennsylvania, he actively participated, despite failing health, in political affairs almost to the day of his death, which occurred on April 17, 1790.

## ✓GEORGE WASHINGTON

Father of his country and leader of its revolutionary struggle for independence, George Washington was distinguished less by the brilliancy of his talents than by his judicious and temperate approach to problems. He helped to weld into unity the diverse elements which formed the United States. Congress unanimously said of him five days after his death: 'First in war, first in peace and first in the hearts of his countrymen.'

He was born in Virginia on February 22, 1732, the son of a prosperous landowner. His education was scanty. At fifteen,

an orphan, he left school and went to live with his half-brother, Lawrence, who had inherited their father's estate. There he became a surveyor. During the French and Indian War he entered the militia and eventually became commander-in-chief of all Virginia forces. In 1759 he married the widow Martha Dandridge Custis, and settled down at the family estate at Mount Vernon which he had by then inherited from his brother.

He had been a member of the Virginia legislature, and in 1774 he was elected a delegate to the First Continental Congress. Comparatively unknown, he was chosen, nevertheless, commander-in-chief of the Colonial forces when it was decided to fight for independence. He swiftly organized his army and in March, 1776, they drove the British out of Boston. Thereafter he won no major battle until the surrender of the English army under Cornwallis, at Yorktown, on October 19, 1781. But it was his inspiring leadership and great resourcefulness that won the war.

In 1789 he was called again to lead his country, this time as its first President. For eight years he served in this capacity, trying to chart the course of a new state. Bitterly abused by some, as in the case of America's relations with the First Republic of France, he held conscientiously to his tasks. It was with relief that he retired finally in 1797 to his home at Mount Vernon where he died on December 14, 1799.

## ALEXANDER HAMILTON

Alexander Hamilton, the ideological founder of the Republican party in the United States, was born at Charles Town, in the British West Indies, on January 11, 1757. He was the natural son of a Scotch merchant whose failure in business caused Alexander to go to work at the age of twelve. Within two years, however, the boy proved himself capable of managing the counting-house for which he worked. With the aid of friends and relatives he was soon able to continue his education.

in America. In 1772 he arrived at Boston and two years later he was ready to enter King's College, New York City (now Columbia University), where he achieved a brilliant record as a student.

Almost immediately Hamilton began to take an active part in the colonial struggle for independence. When the Revolutionary War broke out he had already earned a national reputation by his speeches and pamphlets. Having obtained a captaincy in the Colonial Army, he steadily advanced and ultimately became a lieutenant-colonel and aide-de-camp to George Washington. When the fighting ceased he resigned his commission and began the study of law. Within six months he was admitted to practice. It was but a short time before he was playing a leading role in the new government. He originated a new system of taxation for the states and as a member of the Constitutional Convention helped to draw up that document. Later he was largely responsible for New York's ratification.

Hamilton reached the height of his political career as secretary of the treasury in Washington's Cabinet. His policies, which brought him into constant and bitter conflict with Thomas Jefferson, the secretary of state, tended away from the democratic ideals which had inspired the revolution. Nevertheless he established the foundations of an orderly financial system. After his resignation from the Cabinet in 1795, he resumed his successful practice of law. In 1801 he founded the *New York Evening Post* mainly as an organ for the propagation of his political beliefs. It was in the course of his political activities that he earned the enmity of Aaron Burr, who engaged him in a duel. Hamilton, mortally wounded, died on the day following the encounter, July 12, 1804.

## THOMAS JEFFERSON ✓

Third President of the United States and founder of the Democratic Party, Thomas Jefferson was one of the truly great liberals of modern times. He was born on April 13, 1743, at

Shadwell, Virginia, then part of the frontier wilderness He studied at home and then at the College of William and Mary. When he was twenty-three he was admitted to the bar. Seven years later he abandoned his practice with a tidy fortune and a profound dislike for lawyers, and settled down to the life of 'an independent country gentleman

Jefferson's interest in public affairs, however, never permitted him to enjoy his retirement. He had been elected a member of the Virginia House of Burgesses and, as colonial problems became acute, he took an increasingly active part in the movement for independence His suggestions to Virginia delegates to the Continental Congress were published in a pamphlet entitled *A Summary View of the Rights of America*, and placed him among the foremost leaders of the revolution, in England he was singled out for special prosecution, and in America his associates chose him to draft the Declaration of Independence

Resigning his seat in the Congress, Jefferson turned his attention to the formulation of a constitution for his native Virginia Many of his ideas were incorporated in that document; others were included in the statutes years later In 1779 he was elected governor of Virginia In 1783, again in Congress, he headed a committee appointed to consider the treaty of peace with England In the following year he went to France as minister of the new American government and served with great success

As secretary of state in the Cabinet of George Washington he promulgated the ideals of democracy around which the Democratic Party was built, and which led to his election in 1800 as President of the United States He left the presidency after two terms and devoted part of his remaining years to the establishment of the University of Virginia, which he considered one of his most important works He died on July 4, 1826, at Monticello, the home he had built himself The epitaph, which he had chosen, reads "Here was buried Thomas Jefferson, author of the Declaration of American Independence, of the statute of Virginia for religious freedom, and father of the University of Virginia "

## PATRICK HENRY

Patrick Henry, American statesman, was born in Virginia on May 29, 1736. With but a common school education, he began working early, as a farmer and later as a storekeeper. He married when he was eighteen. Three years later he began to study law, at which he was immediately successful. In 1765 he was elected to the Virginia legislature. There and at the Continental Congresses he won a leading position among American patriots by his bold and eloquent speeches. It was in the state legislature that Henry electrified the assemblage with a speech in which he declared that "Caesar had his Brutus, Charles the First his Cromwell, and George the Third—may profit by their example." It was Henry, also, who first spoke the oft-quoted line, "Give me liberty or give me death."

After the Revolutionary War Henry championed a more conservative policy and urged defeat of the new constitution. He had twice been governor of the state of Virginia and long had been an important figure in his state's politics. In 1789, after the constitution had been adopted in spite of his opposition, he returned to the practice of law, retiring finally in 1791. He died on June 6, 1799.

## THOMAS PAINE

Thomas Paine, revolutionary propagandist, was born in England on January 29, 1737. In 1771 he sailed for America and speedily became active in the movement for independence. In January, 1776, he wrote a pamphlet *Common Sense*, advocating militant opposition to the Crown. "These are the times that try men's souls" were the sonorous opening words of a second pamphlet. His usefulness throughout the Revolution later was recognized by the Continental Congress.

In 1787, he returned to Europe. When his book on *The Rights of Man*, a prophetic book on democracy, dedicated to Washington, made it necessary for him to flee from England, he confined his activities to France where he was elected to

the National Convention, the legislative body of the new First Republic. But his popularity did not last long. Opposing the execution of the king brought about his imprisonment for a year. On his way to prison he was able to hand a friend the manuscript of his *Age of Reason*, an attack on established religion. In 1802 he returned to America. Poor, ill, dissipated and drunk, he died in New York on June 8, 1809.

## PAUL REVERE

The role in American history of Paul Revere, patriot and hero of Henry Wadsworth Longfellow's poem *The Midnight Ride of Paul Revere*, was much more important than is generally known. The messenger galloping through the New England countryside to warn his neighbors of the advance of British troops was but a small part of his busy life. There were other rides in the interest of liberty besides the famous one of the "eighteenth of April, in Seventy-five." There were other activities as a member of the revolutionary group, the Sons of Liberty. In addition Revere was a silversmith, dentist, engraver, merchant, and family man. He manufactured gunpowder and cannons and mastered the art of bell-casting. After the Revolution his primary interest was the manufacture of ships' metal parts, and in 1801 he embarked on what was one of his greatest services to his country: the founding of a rolling mill for making the copper hull sheathing of ships. He had made the copper and brass parts for the first six ships of the American Navy, of which the *Constitution* (familiarily known as *Old Ironsides*) was the most famous. After the building of the rolling mill, the *Constitution* was re-coppered with metal from Revere's mill. In his later years Revere was closely associated with Robert Fulton in making copper boilers for a new type of boat which Fulton called the steamship.

Paul Revere, born in Boston in 1735, was the son of a French immigrant silversmith, Apollos Rivoire. Paul received some formal education but was apprenticed at an early age in his father's business. He participated in the Boston Tea Party

(1773) and the next day began a trip on horseback to carry the news of the incident to Philadelphia and New York. A year later he rode sixty miles through snow to deliver a warning of the impending arrival of British reinforcements at Fort Mifflin and Fort Mifflin. On the strength of this warning the fort was taken by the Americans. Revere served on a committee whose duty was to watch the movements of the British, and on an April night in 1775 after receiving the signal of two lanterns hung in the steeple of the old North Church in Boston—a signal which meant that the British were moving by sea—he began his ride to warn the countryside that the enemy was coming. In August of 1757 Revere married Sara Orne, by whom he had eight children. After Sara's death in 1773 he married Rachel Walker and increased his family by eight more. Paul Revere died on Sunday May 10 1818.

## NATHAN HALE

volunteer Early in the conflict he was made a captain for his gallantry, and when the men in his company wanted to return home at the end of their time, he offered them his month's pay if they would stay a month longer While stationed in New York he executed a bold feat With the aid of a few picked volunteers Hale boarded a British sloop loaded with provisions in the East River, imprisoned the guard and delivered the food to the hungry men of his army. When General George Washington made known his need for a man to enter the British lines and obtain needed information, Hale volunteered for the mission, although he knew that capture meant ignominious death as a spy Disguised as a schoolteacher in search of employment, he succeeded in getting behind the British lines and learning the necessary facts He had reached a comparatively safe point on his return journey when he was seized by the British. A Tory cousin recognized and betrayed him The information he carried concealed between the soles of his shoes convicted him as a spy He was denied the consolations of a minister and a Bible, and the letters he wrote to his family were destroyed in his presence The excuse which the British gave for this action was that "it was necessary that the rebels never know that they had a man who could die with such firmness."

## JOHN PAUL JONES

Among the many immortal sayings left by John Paul Jones, first of America's great sea fighters, none is better remembered than his reply to the British captain who asked for his surrender "I have not yet begun to fight" It was reported that never in his career did he have adequate ships, supplies or men, that his accomplishments were the result of his own skill, courage and devotion to the cause he served

This famous seaman was born in Scotland on July 6, 1747. His name was John Paul, the Jones being added later. He became a sailor at the age of twelve He was a lieutenant in the Continental navy when he raised the first naval flag of an

American squadron, emblazoned with a rattle-sake and bearing the words "Don't tread on me." Jones was a captain when he hoisted the first Stars and Stripes that ever flew from the peak of an American man-of-war, and this flag received from the French fleet the first formal recognition ever given by a foreign fleet to the United States in a salute to the American flag. After the American Revolution Jones served under Catherine of Russia. Upon leaving her navy, he lived for two years in Paris, where he died on July 18, 1792.

## JOHN MARSHALL

John Marshall, characterized as the greatest of the chief justices of the Supreme Court and the best expounder of the Constitution, was born in Virginia on September 24, 1755. Marshall was taught at home by his father and mother. His introduction to law came at William and Mary College where he enrolled near the end of the Revolutionary War, after having served as a captain. He was admitted to the bar before the war was over. He became a leading lawyer and a member of the Virginia legislature, where he was extremely influential in bringing about the adoption of the Constitution.

Marshall served his country on a special mission to France and in 1799 was elected to Congress. The following year he was appointed Secretary of State, and in 1801, under President Jefferson, he became Chief Justice of the Supreme Court. In this position he held for the remaining thirty-four years of his life. Among his famous cases was the trial of Aaron Burr for high treason. Marshall's home was in Richmond, Virginia, but he died in Philadelphia, where he had gone for medical treatment on July 6, 1835.

the American Army during the Revolution, was born on September 6, 1757, and came into possession of a large fortune at the age of thirteen, when his father died. When the nineteen-year-old captain of dragoons presented himself to the American Congress and offered to serve as a volunteer, he was made a major general. George Washington, for whom Lafayette named one of his sons, was his lifelong friend. For his services during the conflict, he received formal recognition from Congress, and upon a return visit to America in 1784, he was greeted with tremendous enthusiasm.

Lafayette was an early leader in the French Revolution and was responsible for the adoption of the tricolor of modern France. He hoped, however, for the restoration of a limited monarchy and thereby lost his popularity. He fled the country and was captured by the Austrians, who mistreated him severely. Napoleon obtained his freedom in 1797. He continued to take a part in French political affairs until his death on May 30, 1834.

## MARIE ANTOINETTE

Marie Antoinette, the Austrian princess who became queen of France, is among those personalities whose worth historians dispute. Few now believe that when she was told the mobs of Paris had no bread, she replied, "Let them eat cake." However, many do believe that she was stupid and apathetic to the suffering of the masses, while others depict her as a saint and a martyr. The princess was born in Vienna on November 2, 1755, daughter of the great Empress Maria Theresa. The marriage of the little princess to the dauphin of France was solemnized at Versailles on May 16, 1770. Besides disliking her concern for Austria's welfare, many people resented her disregard for court etiquette and were shocked by her questionable conduct. Her husband, who became Louis XVI in 1774, was affectionate but not passionate. Marie Antoinette found solace in the company of dissolute courtiers, extravagances in dress,

in amusements, attendance at horse races, and masked balls. Scandalous gossip diminished somewhat after the birth of Marie Antoinette's first child, and she led a quieter life. But she was hated by the Paris masses, who held her responsible for the financial chaos of the country. The affair of the diamond necklace confirmed and sealed the verdict. It was not satisfactorily proved whether the queen deliberately worked out the intrigue to trap the Cardinal of Rohan, whom she is reported to have hated, or whether she was the innocent victim of a clever thief. At any rate, a diamond necklace valued at 1,600,000 livres was released by a firm of jewelers who, when they came to collect their money, were informed that Marie Antoinette had never ordered or received any such necklace. The publicity of the ensuing trial was extremely harmful to the already unpopular queen.

During the days after the outbreak of the Revolution, the king was vacillating and weak and Marie Antoinette regrettably for the safety of the family. Her intrigues took the form of sponsoring an armed intervention by Austria, which she was convinced was the only means of rescue for her and her family. The king was executed on January 17, 1793; Marie Antoinette was separated from her children, forced to witness the mistreatment of her son and was subjected personally to many insults. Her trial began in October, 1793, and the queen was led to the guillotine on the sixteenth day of the same month.

visional government Although he was not directly responsible for many of the atrocities of the French Revolution, he was associated with those who were, and he voted for the death of King Louis XVI For a time he was president of the Committee of Public Safety, but upon its reorganization he relinquished his position as a member, and this cost him his life He had many enemies eager for his downfall, among them another revolutionist, Maximilien Robespierre Danton was convicted on a spurious charge of conspiring to restore the monarchy and was guillotined on April 6, 1794 He was only thirty-six. Defiant to the last, he asserted, "I am Danton till my death, tomorrow I shall sleep in glory."

## ROBESPIERRE

The French revolutionist Maximilien Marie Isidore Robespierre met his death on the guillotine, the same fate to which he had condemned thousands during the Reign of Terror. Robespierre, born on May 6, 1758, was a follower of Rousseau, adopted the profession of law, rapidly became known as a leader among the liberals and was crowned by the people as an absolutely incorruptible patriot In the early stages of the French Revolution his power was by no means absolute among the radicals, but his plea for the death of Louis XVI did much to strengthen his position In July of 1793 he became a member of the Committee of Public Safety and in this capacity decreed the actions that link his name with the worst horrors of the Revolution Yet in spite of his faults he never catered to the mob and he remained honest

Robespierre's downfall began when he attempted to override the other members of the committee For more than three months he was practically a dictator. The first attack against him was instituted on June 17, 1794 In little more than a month he was taken to prison in a pitiful condition due to a gunshot wound in the jaw He was sentenced to death and guillotined on July 28, 1794

## NAPOLÉON

One of the world's greatest military leaders, Napoleon Bonaparte lived to see almost all his world-shaking accomplishments undone. He was born on August 15, 1769, in Ajaccio, Corsica, which not long before had become a French possession. He was the fourth son of a large family of Italian descent. His military education in France completed, he entered the army as a sub-lieutenant of artillery in 1785 and became a friend of Robespierre. He was only twenty-six when he became commander of the French army in Italy. It was in the campaign that followed that his men affectionately dubbed him "Little Corporal."

In 1799, returned from an expedition against the English in Egypt, he was chosen first of the three consuls who were to take over the unstable government of the First Republic. The three were to govern together for ten years but Napoleon was soon dictator. In 1802 he was made consul for life and two years later he was named emperor of France. During his consulship he reorganized and stabilized the government. Subsequently he proved himself to be an able administrator, abolishing many abuses. However the coalition of other European powers determined to destroy democracy, led him into further warfare which became a campaign of aggression in which he was victorious over Russia, Prussia and Austria. He made his brothers rulers of conquered countries and in all of these he introduced the principles of the French Revolution.

He had married the beautiful Josephine Bonaparte, of Martinique, in 1796. In 1810 he obtained a divorce and married Maria Louisa, daughter of the Austrian emperor. He seemed confident of the future and he valued her. But Napoleon was on the brink of his swift decline. In 1812 he began his disastrous march on Moscow. When he returned defeated, he had lost 400,000 men and a succession of reverses followed until, in 1814, Paris was taken by the allied armies. Napoleon abdicated and was sent into exile on Elba.

A year later Napoleon escaped from his island home. Recruiting an army, he marched on Paris and proclaimed himself

emperor Renewal of the war was inevitable and he accepted it But on June 18, 1815, he was defeated by the British and Prussians at Waterloo. On July 15 he surrendered and, as a prisoner, was sent to Saint Helena where he died on May 5, 1821.

## LORD NELSON

Horatio Nelson, the most famous naval officer in British history, was born on September 29, 1758, and entered the English navy at twelve Three years later he went on an Arctic expedition and upon his return was made a lieutenant After being promoted to the rank of post-captain in 1779, he was sent to Nicaragua in command of a man-of-war and took Fort San Carlos Nelson was married in the West Indies in 1787, was retired from active service six months later and lived quietly in England He was fond of his wife, but not in love with her On the outbreak of war with the French Republic, he was put in command of the ship *Agamemnon* and sent to join Admiral Samuel Hood in the Mediterranean, where he took part in the siege of Bastia He lost one of his eyes during the siege of Calvi On a diplomatic mission to Naples in 1793 Nelson met Lady Emma Hamilton, wife of the British minister there, and fell completely under her influence, scandalizing English society and leading to a separation from his wife

On September 25, 1796, Nelson, a commodore now, was ordered to leave the Mediterranean, but he was soon sent back to get supplies at Elba. On returning he passed through the Spanish fleet which had then joined the cause of France On the next day occurred the famous battle of Cape Saint Vincent. His skill and courage made Nelson a popular hero A few days later he became a rear-admiral His next service was an attack on Santa Cruz, in which he lost his right arm. When the French fleet carrying Napoleon Bonaparte escaped from Toulon and made its way to Egypt, Nelson followed and defeated the fleet in the Bay of Aboukir at the mouth of the Nile on August 1, 1798, ruining Napoleon's plans for Eastern conquests For this feat he received the title Baron Nelson of

the Nile and a pension of \$10 000. He was promoted to vice-admiral in 1801.

Nelson took part in many other campaigns. For his bombardment of Copenhagen he was created a viscount. He attacked the French flotilla at Boulogne, commanded the British fleet in the Mediterranean and for two years engaged in the blockade of Toulon. Again the French escaped and the British admiral chased the fleet all the way to the West Indies. He came back to Europe again, where it took refuge at Cadiz. But Admiral Villeneuve, in desperation, decided to fight it out. The French and Spanish fleets under his command set out on October 19, 1805, and two days later met the British squadron off Cape Trafalgar. It was there that Nelson uttered his famous signal to his fleet: "England expects every man to do his duty." The desperate engagement ended in victory for the British, but Nelson was fatally wounded aboard his ship and died the same day. It was largely owing to him that England remained the one nation never conquered by Napoleon.

## JOHANN WOLFGANG VON GOETHE

Johann Wolfgang von Goethe, not only Germany's greatest poet but a world figure, passed his childhood in Frankfurt on the Main, where he was born on August 28, 1749. At sixteen Goethe entered the university of Leipzig. To these early days belong two small plays and a collection of lyrics inspired by a youthful love affair. In Leipzig also he took lessons in drawing. During his convalescence from a serious illness, Goethe became engrossed in occult philosophy, alchemy, and religion. Next he began a law course in Strasbourg and studied Gothic architecture, passed through a period of fervent Germanism, and was profoundly influenced by a new friend, the author Johann von Herder. Another love affair, this time with a daughter of a village pastor, was doomed to an unhappy ending. The girl was the inspiration for *Mary Stuart*, *Tristram* and appears again in *Die Leiden des Werthers*. After being written in 1773, *Goethe's* *Beziehungen* established the *Sturm*

spearcan drama form on the German stage, inaugurating the literary movement known as *Sturm und Drang* (Storm and Stress). Other works of this time were another tragedy, *Clavigo*, and a sentimental novel, *The Sorrows of Werther*. The drama of *Faust*, his masterpiece, began to take shape prior to his departure for Weimar in 1775, where the second phase of Goethe's life began. There were three more romances—one in Wetzlar, where he practiced law; another with a girl he met on the Rhine, and a third with a Frankfort society woman to whom he was engaged for a time. Goethe was invited to the court of the duke of Weimar, where he became a minister of state, directed the court theater and took an interest in agriculture and mining. The love interest was provided by the wife of a Weimar official. The important writing of this period did not come until after a visit to Italy, where he reveled in art treasures, deepened his scientific knowledge, finished *Egmont*, a drama already begun, and did further work on *Faust*. Upon his return to Weimar he took a young girl, Christiane Vulpius, into his home. He had a son by her and later legalized their relationship. He began work on a new novel, *Wilhelm Meister's Apprenticeship*. This was only finished after he became acquainted with the poet Friedrich von Schiller, whose friendship and influence were of extreme importance. Under Schiller's encouragement he wrote the epic poem *Hermann and Dorothea*.

The final period of Goethe's life began after Schiller's death and saw the completion of his crowning achievement, *Faust*, containing all his matured wisdom. Goethe died in Weimar on March 22, 1832.

## FRANZ JOSEPH HAYDN

The fame of Franz Joseph Haydn, Austrian composer, rests upon his position as a master of music for string quartet, for which he wrote seventy-seven pieces, and upon his symphonies of which he composed more than a hundred. For a rigorous musical course, Haydn paid in part with money borrowed from

his friends and in part by teaching music. After he became better known as a teacher and composer, he received aid from several wealthy patrons of the arts and his life was easier financially. He made the most of his opportunities and became famous throughout Europe. His wife, who was unsympathetic and unworthy of him, used his manuscripts as curl papers and pie forms and squandered his money on fire.

One of Haydn's best friends was the composer Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart. On Haydn's return journey from England, where he conducted a series of concerts and wrote his "Surprise" Symphony, he met Ludwig van Beethoven, who was then only twenty-two. Beethoven presented to Haydn a cantata and later studied under him for a year. Haydn was born on March 31, 1732, and died on May, 31, 1809.

## ~ WOLFGANG AMADEUS MOZART

The childhood of the Austrian composer Wolfgang Amadeus Mozart was erratic and abnormal. He was born on January 27, 1756. Signs of his musical genius were apparent when he was only three years old. He commenced composing at the age of four and made his first public appearance in 1761. In his sixth year he wrote his first published work. His life for many years was a series of appearances throughout Europe, punctuated by periods of study and by constant composition. It is recorded, however, that he remained unspoiled by the flattery he received from Europe's royalty. Emperor Francis I said to his son when he played and called him "my little magician." When Francis's future queen, Marie Antoinette, helped him when he slipped on a polished floor, he said, "You are my kind when I grow up I will marry you." One instance which did much to spread his fame occurred when he was suddenly invited to create, on one's consternation, he wrote from memory after only a few hearings the *Miserere* of the Italian composer Gregorio Allegri, a sacred composition guarded with the greatest of care. Scores were forbidden to transcribe it on pain of excommunication.

Mozart grew in stature as a composer with his increasing

years. Some of his best works, including the operas *Die Zauberflöte* and *La Clemenza di Tito*, and the *Requiem*, which he believed he was writing for his own death, were composed during the last year of his life. His most famous operas, *Le Nozze di Figaro* and *Don Giovanni* (the overture to which he wrote in one night), appeared in 1785 and 1787, respectively. The separate published works ascribed to Mozart number 626. He was also a remarkable performer on the piano, organ and violin. The Italian composer Gioachino Antonio Rossini called him not the greatest but the "only musician in the world."

In 1782 Mozart married Constanze, the daughter of Fridolin Weber, a prompter and copyist. Constanze was a poor housekeeper and from then until his death Mozart was constantly in need of money, although he was under the patronage of royalty and had many friends. He had enemies also, some of whom were very bitter. Rumor accused the Italian composer Antonio Salieri of poisoning Mozart, but it was more commonly believed that his death was caused by typhoid fever. He died on December 5, 1791, and was buried in a pauper's grave. Constanze suffered a breakdown at his death, and when she was able to visit the cemetery later, she could not identify his grave.

## LUDWIG VAN BEETHOVEN

The most eminent of instrumental composers, Ludwig van Beethoven, was born at Bonn, Prussia, on December 16, 1770. His father, a musician, hoping to produce a child prodigy, made him practice on the harpsichord at the age of three. Lessons on the violin, clavichord, pianoforte, organ, and in composition, followed. When Ludwig was eleven, he appeared in Holland as a piano virtuoso. At about the same time he was appointed assistant organist at the chapel of the Elector of Bonn.

When he was thirteen, the composer's first work was published. In 1787 he was somehow provided with funds for a period of study with Mozart in Vienna. A few months later,

however, he was recalled to Bonn because of the illness of his mother. Soon after her death he became the chief support of his family. It was his duty too to take care of the salary of his father who had become a habitual drunkard. He began to give lessons and to make public appearances.

When he was twenty-one he went to Vienna where he remained for the rest of his life. There he studied under Haydn and others. Despite his eccentricity and his outrageously bad manners, he found excellent patrons and was received in the best society. Nevertheless he was always a democrat who hated tyrants. Although his *Eroica Symphony* was dedicated to Napoleon he tore up the dedication when the latter assumed the emperor's crown. His first five years in Vienna were the happiest in his life. In 1795 he made his debut there as a pianist and, with his *Concerto in C Major*, won instant recognition.

From about 1798 he was troubled with a defect in his hearing which steadily grew worse. He was totally deaf when, in 1814, he composed his eighth symphony. He wrote only one more after that. In 1822 he made a disastrous attempt to conduct an orchestra. In private he continued to play, and sometimes friends would come upon him playing at the piano although no sounds were coming forth. He refused, however, to give up his art.

Although he was surrounded in Vienna by friends and admirers, Beethoven lived a solitary life. Genuinely simple and sincere he nevertheless was inordinately suspicious. Consequently, all his deeply human emotions found successful expression only in his music. He died on March 26, 1827.

## · IMMANUEL KANT

Metaphysician and founder of "critical philosophy," Immanuel Kant completely dominated philosophical thought of the nineteenth century. He was born of Scotch ancestry in Königsberg, Prussia, on April 22, 1724. When he was sixteen he entered the University of Königsberg where, in 1755, he

received the degree of Doctor of Philosophy and published his thesis on *Natural History and Theory of the Heavens*. Thereafter he held the position of private lecturer, or "docent," at the university until 1770 when he was given the chair of metaphysics and logic.

Kant's life at the university was almost ludicrously like that of the traditional caricature of a professor. A little man, scarcely five feet tall, he was physically delicate. To safeguard his health, and to obtain maximum time for study, he set himself a daily schedule of activities from which he never departed. Nor did he ever travel farther than sixty miles from his home. He never married.

In 1781 he brought forth his *Critique of Pure Reason*, his chief contribution to philosophy. In it he developed the thesis that the mind is an active organ which has its own *a priori* powers of knowledge. Kant had aimed his work mainly at the empiricists whose thesis was that the mind derived all of its knowledge from experience through the senses. Soon after the publication of this work, however, churchmen throughout Germany began furiously to protest his attitude toward religion.

In a subsequent work, *Critique of Practical Reason*, he developed the thesis that our individual freedom lies in obedience to the moral law that speaks within us. Kant continued his philosophic exploration despite clerical protest. But when, at the age of sixty-five, he hailed the French Revolution, with enthusiasm, and received a warning from King Frederick William II that further "offenses" would be followed by "unpleasant consequences," he agreed to preserve silence. This he did to the day of his death, on February 12, 1804.

## ROBERT BURNS

The popular poet Robert Burns was born in Scotland on January 25, 1759. He composed his first poem at seventeen. Burns's family was very poor and he worked hard as a plowman on the farm, turning for relaxation to wine, women and song. One of his sweethearts, Jean Armour, eventually became

his wife Another, Mary Campbell, who died of a fever, inspired *To Mary in Heaven* and *Highland Mary*

In 1786, poor and heartbroken, Burns published a volume of poems to raise money for passage to Jamaica, where he was to work as a bookkeeper, but the success of his poems and negotiations for a second book induced him to remain in Scotland He went to Edinburgh, where he became a social lion and led a Bohemian existence After he married Jean, he received a civil appointment at Dumfries His last years were not happy He did not like the duties of his office as an exciseman, and his outspoken sympathy for the French Revolution caused him trouble with the government He died in 1796

Among Burns's poems are. *The Cotter's Saturday Night; To a Mouse, To a Louse, Tam o'Shanter; Scots wha hae wi' Wallace Bled, Flow Gently, Sweet Afton, A Man's a Man for a' That; My Love's like a Red, Red Rose, John Anderson, My Jo; and Auld Lang Syne*, all speaking with deep sincerity of the everyday things that the common man feels and thinks

## SIR WALTER SCOTT

The Scottish poet and novelist Sir Walter Scott, born at Edinburgh, Scotland, on August 15, 1771, suffered an attack of spinal meningitis at the age of eighteen months which left him with a permanently crippled right leg Some believe had it not been for that handicap, he would have become a soldier rather than a writer. In spite of this restriction, he was described as having been of high spirits, attractive to both sexes and a boon companion at the bar As a boy Scott not only read widely, but also remembered what he read, and he became acquainted with several languages His wife was a French girl His inspiration for writing poetry came from reading German ballads After the success of his *The Lay of the Last Minstrel*, in 1805, Scott gave up work in law to undertake the double occupation of writing and performing the duties of a clerk of session In addition to composing *Marmion* and *The Lady of the Lake*, both of which increased his fam-

as a poet, Scott took an interest in politics, entered the printing business, wrote articles, edited books and still found time for reading and study. This display of genius and energy hardly had its equal in the history of English literature

In 1812 Scott bought a farm on the Tweed River in Scotland and erected a palatial home. From then on his life was made still busier by his duties as a country gentleman, a position of which he was extremely proud. His expenditures were enormous, and only the income from his novels, which began to appear during this period, staved off immediate financial ruin. The first novel, *Waverley*, begun in 1805 and laid aside upon a friend's advice, was completed in four weeks in 1814 and published anonymously. It was highly successful, as were its immediate followers, which included *Guy Mannering*, *Rob Roy* and *The Heart of Midlothian*. By this time Scott was feeling the physical strain of his manner of living. *The Bride of Lammermoor* was dictated while he was in such pain that afterwards he could not recall the story. In spite of his ill health he began *Ivanhoe*, the most popular of all his works. Among the books next published were *Kenilworth*, *Quentin Durward* and *The Talisman*. Next came bankruptcy and a debt of about £130,000, which Scott felt honor bound to pay. Still disregarding his poor health, which had now begun to affect his brain, he undertook to write his way out of debt, refusing all assistance and enduring many infirmities. He was able actually to pay only about half of the sum, but he died believing himself free of debt. His death came on September 21, 1832.

## LORD BYRON

A poet of energy, passion and wit, George Gordon, Lord Byron was one of the early nineteenth century poets who turned from classic models to new forms of freer expression, greater individuality and more intense feeling for the beauties of nature. He was born in London, January 22, 1788. His parents having separated, he was taken to live with his mother. He was handsome, clear-eyed, endowed with a beautiful speaking

voice When he was ten he inherited the title Lord Byron from his granduncle He was educated at Dulwich, Harrow and Trinity College

In 1807 he published *Hours of Idleness*, a volume of verse which critics received with hostility Stung by the comments of Lord Brougham in the "Edinburgh Review," Byron wrote the satire, *English Bards and Scotch Reviewers*, displaying a wit and masterful versification that definitely established him as a literary figure After a tour of the continent, he returned with two cantos of *Childe Harold*, which he published in 1812 with immense success Other works followed, of lesser stature, while he indulged in the revelry of London society.

In 1815 he married a Miss Milbanke A little more than a year later, after the birth of a daughter, they separated Slander and calumny attended his domestic difficulties, becoming so sharp that he left England, never to return He met Shelley in Geneva and the two became intimate friends. On the Continent he showed scant respect for the conventions, yet this was for him a period of extraordinary creativeness in which every detail of his tempestuous life was revealed in poetry He completed his *Childe Harold* and wrote *The Prisoner of Chillon*, *Manfred* and *The Lament of Tasso*, all before 1819 That year he wrote *Mazeppa* and published the unfinished poem *Don Juan*. During this time he wrote also a number of dramas

In 1823 he went to Greece to aid that country in its fight for freedom from Turkish rule There he helped greatly in organizing the struggle. In the midst of this work, however, he fell ill and died of exposure and fever on April 19, 1824 Byron's poems were almost as popular in France as in his own country and were a constant source of inspiration to French writers and painters, who often showed greater critical insight than British interpreters

## PERCY BYSSHE SHELLEY

The British poet Percy Bysshe Shelley was born in 1792, an heir to rank and wealth, but he early set himself against all

orthodox authority When he was only eighteen he was expelled from Oxford and forbidden to return home because of his pamphlet on *The Necessity of Atheism* The same year he married Harriet Westbrook, his sister's schoolmate, and in 1813 the couple moved to London. Here *Queen Mab* was printed for private circulation In 1814 Shelley eloped to France with Mary Godwin, daughter of a well-known philosopher and his no less famous wife, Mary Wollstonecraft Two years later Harriet committed suicide Free to marry Mary, the poet spent the remaining years of his brief life with her in Switzerland and Italy -

In 1816 Shelley wrote *Alastor* and became a friend of the poet Byron The next year he produced *The Revolt of Islam*, in which he poured out his hatred of oppression. Shelley once laughingly said that he would have been utterly unknown had it not been for the publicity of attacks in which he was called a dangerous monster of revolution *Prometheus Unbound*, in which Prometheus represents mankind, appeared in 1820. Upon the death of the poet John Keats, Shelley composed the famous elegy *Adonais*, and soon after, in April of 1822, he himself was drowned while boating The warmth of Shelley's genius is expressed not only in the exalted longer poems mentioned but in such short, melodic lyrics as the *Ode to the Sky Lark*, *The Colud*, the *Ode to the West Wind*, and *To the Night*

## JOHN KEATS

In less than five years John Keats, English poet, produced poetry which has hardly been surpassed in the history of English literature Keats was born in October of 1795, and after leaving school in 1810 he was apprenticed to a surgeon In 1816 he met Leigh Hunt, poet, critic and essayist, and began to write the poems by which he is known today. His first volume appeared in March of 1817, the latter part of that year was occupied with writing *Endymion* This was published in 1818 and *Isabella* was begun Keats took a walking tour that

year which was followed by a serious illness, but in October he began *Hyperion*, which Shelley admired so much that he invited Keats to come to Italy and live with him. Keats refused. In 1819 he completed his other two longer poems, *The Eve of St. Agnes* and *Lamia*. In 1820 it was discovered that he had tuberculosis. He sailed for Italy, where he died in Rome on February 23, 1821. He was buried there near Percy Bysshe Shelley's grave.

Among his many shorter poems are *The Eve of St. Mark*, *Ode to a Nightingale*, *To Autumn*, *On a Grecian Urn*, *La Belle Dame Sans Merci*, *To Psyche*, *On Melancholy* and *On First Looking into Chapman's Homer*, all marked by a delight in the beauty of the physical world.

## HEINRICH HEINE

Heinrich Heine, German poet, was really a cosmopolitan. Although he was born at Dusseldorf, December 13, 1799, the child of a Jewish couple, he grew up using French words and was only sixteen when he wrote *Two Grenadiers*, a song glorifying Napoleon, later set to music by Robert Schumann. *Guilliver's Travels*, by the English writer Jonathan Swift, was one of his favorite books and it was under the influence of the Scotch writer Sir Walter Scott that he wrote his first plays.

In 1821, he published a book of poems. In 1827 Heine visited England. The next year he traveled in Italy. Revolutionary sentiments in his *Italian Sketches* caused such excitement that it was unsafe for him to remain in Germany. After 1831 he lived in Paris, marrying a French girl, and writing in both French and German, poems that Théophile Gautier called "joyous and sad, sceptical and credulous, tender and cruel, sentimental and mocking, classic and romantic." *The Lorelei*, *On Wings of Song*, and *Du Bist Wie Eine Blume* are among the loveliest. Heine died at Paris on February 17, 1856.

## GOYA

Francisco José de Goya y Lucientes, Spanish painter, was born at Fuendetodos near Zaragoza. March 31, 1746 On account of his daring caricatures and satirical works he has been called "The Hogarth of Spain" At fourteen he went to Zaragoza to study At twenty he went to Madrid In 1789 he became court painter. The variety of his work is extraordinary Paintings, tapestries, etchings, aquatints, lithographs and drawings show us Spain in its beauty and brutality The subjects are portraits, nudes, bullfights, wars, mystical landscapes, games, proverbs ✓

In 1824 Goya paid a visit to Paris He was to have tremendous influence on French painters He died at Bordeaux, France, a voluntary exile, on March 16, 1828 His works include portraits of the royal family, the Duchess of Alba both dressed and nude, *Gossiping Women*, *The Third of May, 1808*, *The Majas on the Balcony*; *City on a Rock*; *Don Bernardo Yriarte*; *Don Tiburcio Perez*, *St Peter Repentant*, *Manuel Osorio de Zuniga*, *Vincente Osorio*, and *Luis Maria de Gistué*. Among his series of etchings the most extraordinary are *Disasters of War* and *The Caprices* *The Bulls of Bordeaux* are famous lithographs

## ROBERT FULTON

The true era of steamboating began on the morning of Friday, August 11, 1807, when the *Clermont*, a steamboat invented by Robert Fulton, moved up the Hudson River against the wind and tide at a speed of five miles an hour The appearance of a boat moving without sails badly frightened the crews of many ships on the river The inventor of this new-fangled boat was born in 1765, the same year as another American inventor, Eli Whitney Fulton first intended to study art, but while in Europe he became so engrossed with the idea of a steamboat that he turned his entire attention to that project His first trial boat was built on the Seine in Paris The

engine was too heavy. The boat broke in half and sank. A stronger boat proved successful in 1803, but there were still many improvements needed.

After the success of 1807 the remainder of Fulton's life was occupied with inventing. In 1814 he was commissioned to build a steamship of war. Thus, the *Fulton*, was the pride of his life. The inventor died on February 24, 1815.

## ELI WHITNEY

The inventor of the cotton gin, Eli Whitney, saw cotton for the first time when he accepted an invitation to visit a Georgia plantation. He had studied law at Yale University, from which he was graduated in 1792, but he had always possessed unusual mechanical ability. Instead of continuing his law practice, he started work on the cotton gin. The first machine was worked by hand and could clean fifty pounds of lint in a day. A patent was granted on March 14, 1794, and a plant for the manufacture of cotton gins was established in New Haven, Connecticut. It was unable to supply the demand and many gins had to be made by blacksmiths.

Numerous complications over infringements on the patent so disgusted Whitney that in 1798 he turned to the manufacture of firearms. He introduced to industry the revolutionary ideas of standardized parts and factory division of labor.

Whitney was born on a farm in Westboro, Massachusetts, on December 8, 1765. He died in 1825.

## FRANCIS SCOTT KEY

The fame of Francis Scott Key, lawyer and author, rests upon *The Star-Spangled Banner*, the words of which he wrote. He stated that they were to be sung to the tune of *Anacreon in Heaven*. Key, who was born on August 9, 1780, took up the practice of law in Washington, and became district attorney for the District of Columbia. In 1814 he witnessed the bom-

bardment of Fort McHenry, near Baltimore, by the British. The firing ceased at dawn, and the onlookers, peering anxiously through the smoke and dim light, saw that the American flag was still flying from the fort. Key immediately wrote the first draft of *The Star-Spangled Banner*. It became instantly popular, but it was not adopted as the national anthem of the United States until 1931. Key died in Baltimore on January 11, 1834.

James Lick, a California millionaire, bequeathed the sum of \$60,000 to build a monument in Key's honor at San Francisco. This monument, completed in 1887, is fifty-one feet high, in the form of a double arch, under which a bronze statue of Key is seated. The arch supports a bronze figure representing America.

## JOHN JACOB ASTOR

On the day in 1779 when John Jacob Astor, then sixteen years old, left the village of Waldorf, Germany, he made a resolution to be industrious and honest and not to gamble. This, together with sound health and good common sense, was almost his entire equipment for a career as one of America's leading capitalists. His name, linked with that of his native village, is commemorated in New York City's famous hotel, the Waldorf-Astoria. Astor made his way to New York, where he began his apprenticeship in the fur business. He earned on a fur trade with the Indians and founded Astoria on the Columbia River. When he was worth \$250,000, Astor moved his store to Broadway, where the Astor House Building now stands. Until he was fifty-five he appeared at his store by seven o'clock each morning.

In addition to fur trading, Astor also purchased New York real estate. At one time he was reported to have owned 7,000 houses in the city. During the latter part of his life he gave some of his fortune to philanthropic enterprises, to his relatives and to the poor of Waldorf. At his death on March 29, 1848, his estate amounted to at least \$20,000,000.

## WASHINGTON IRVING

Among the most popular of Washington Irving's contributions to literature are *The Legend of Sleepy Hollow* and *Rip Van Winkle*, old legends which he re-wrote with the Hudson River country as the background and which have become an integral part of American folklore. The author was born on April 3, 1783, in New York City, and George Washington is reputed to have given his blessing to the boy who was named for him. In 1804 Irving began a two-year trip through Europe. *Knickerbocker's History of New York* appeared in 1809. This burlesque history scandalized old Dutch families but enjoyed an extraordinary success.

In 1815 Irving went to Europe again and soon took up writing as a means of livelihood. *The Sketch Book*, *Bracebridge Hall* and *Tales of a Traveller* established him as a leading author. *The Alhambra*, inspired by a visit to Granada, appeared in 1832. Before his return to the United States, Irving served as secretary of the American Legation in London and received the medal of the Royal Society of Literature and an honorary degree from Oxford. To please his American public he wrote *A Tour on the Prairies*, which appeared in 1835. He died in 1859.

## JAMES FENIMORE COOPER

There was little in the early life of James Fenimore Cooper that indicated his later career would be as a writer of fiction. Cooper, who was born on September 15, 1789, in Burlington, New Jersey, attended Yale until he was expelled and then went to sea. Subsequently he superintended the building of ships for the navy. After his marriage he led the life of a country gentleman to whom writing came accidentally and was not a matter of financial necessity. American newspapers of Cooper's time dealt widely in personalities and personal abuse, and the last years of the author's life were occupied with numerous libel suits. These controversies probably prompted his re-

quest that no biography of him be written. He died in 1851.

Cooper's early novels were *Precaution* and *The Spy*. His next book, *The Pioneers*, the first of his Leather-Stocking Tales, introduced characters who, at his wife's suggestion, were revived in *The Last of the Mohicans* and *The Prairie*. In this series also are *The Pathfinder* and *The Deerslayer*. His other works include sea tales, such as *The Pilot*; a novel of manners, *Home as Found*; and three novels contrasting American and European political systems.

## SIMON BOLIVAR

Leader of the revolutionary struggles which resulted in the independence of what are now Venezuela, Colombia, Ecuador, Panama, Peru and Bolivia, Simon Bolivar is revered there as the "Liberator," and is known in North America as the "George Washington of South America." He was born on July 24, 1783, in Caracas, Venezuela. Of a well-to-do family, he was educated in Madrid and traveled through Europe and the United States. When he was eighteen he married. Two years later his wife died. Thenceforward he devoted his entire life to the fight to establish the sovereignty of the Spanish colonies in South America.

On July 5, 1811, Venezuelan independence was declared. Initial success turned to defeat and Bolivar fled to the viceroyalty of Nueva Granada (now the republics of Colombia and Panama). He led the forces of each country in turn, meeting alternate defeat and victory. In 1819 he led an army from Venezuela across the Andes to the rescue of the hard-pressed revolutionary forces of Nueva Granada. Arriving almost exhausted by the hazardous march, they found that a Spanish force was coming to meet them. With three days to prepare for the engagement, Bolivar rallied his troops and decisively defeated the enemy. A few months later he marched back over the Andes to Venezuela where, after more than a year of intermittent war and peace, on June 24, 1821, his army routed the royal forces.

When Guayaquil and Quito (each a part of what is now Ecuador) had been added to the united, independent government of Nueva Granada and Venezuela, Bolivar proceeded to Peru. On December 9, 1824, the last resistance was overcome and Spanish domination in the New World was ended forever. In his honor a large area within Peru was made an independent republic and given the name República Bolivar (now Bolivia).

In the few years that remained of his life he faced an almost continuous problem of insurrection among the various elements in the newly-liberated territories. After repeated, unsuccessful attempts to restore unity among his people, he retired, ill and almost penniless, to Alejandrino, Colombia, where he died on December 17, 1830.

## ANDREW JACKSON

Andrew Jackson, the seventh President of the United States, was born of Irish immigrants in the pioneer settlement of Waxhaw, South Carolina, on March 15, 1767. His father had died a few months before, and his mother had found refuge as a housekeeper in the home of an invalid sister. He was only nine when the Revolutionary War began, yet he soon was bearing arms. When the war was over, he was a homeless orphan—his mother and two older brothers had died—and he suffered from the effects of smallpox, contracted during a short period in a British prison camp.

At that time Jackson seemed to be preoccupied with horse racing, gambling and other pleasures, yet he managed to study law, and ultimately was admitted to practice. In 1788 he moved to Nashville, then a new frontier settlement, where, three years later, he was married. Jackson and his wife assumed that her first husband had obtained a divorce but it was two years later that the divorce actually was obtained. A second ceremony gave rise to slanderous rumor which Jackson was ever ready to answer with pistol or fists.

In 1796, when Tennessee was admitted to the Union, Jack-

son, already prominent in local politics, was chosen to help frame the state constitution, and was elected to the House of Representatives. Thereafter he was successively senator, judge of the State Supreme Court and major general of the state militia. In 1813 he led a volunteer army against the Indians who had risen against the United States. Two years later, as a major general in the regular army, he led the American forces in the Battle of New Orleans, completely routing the British attackers. The fact that this battle was fought after peace had been declared shows how slowly news traveled in those days.

"Old Hickory," as he became known, was elected President in 1828. He had become a national hero and now his administration was to bring a new ideal into government—Jacksonian Democracy which provided for greater participation of the common people in political affairs. He served two terms in the White House. Both were characterized by democratic reform. One of his most notable battles was his war on the United States Bank. When he retired his popularity was greater than that of any retiring President in the country's history. His fame remained undiminished through the years of his retirement, to the day of his death, June 8, 1845.

## HENRY CLAY

The early life of Henry Clay, American orator and statesman, was one of poverty and privation. He was born on April 12, 1777, and his rudimentary schooling came from a country teacher who was fairly good-natured when sober but cross when he was drunk. Clay's career in the Congress of the United States began in 1806 as a senator, in 1811 he was elected to the House of which he was Speaker for many years, and also served his country as Secretary of State. He was twice an unsuccessful presidential candidate. Upon his second defeat in 1844 even the victors made little of their triumph, feeling that a great wrong had been done, and his supporters actually shed tears.

Clay was an eloquent orator, and his leadership was a strong

factor in bringing about the War of 1812. On the other hand he was the nation's leading pacifist on the slave question, repeatedly effecting compromises which delayed the Civil War. As a senator he made his final speech on the question of slavery in the new state of Texas, a speech which lasted two days and from the effort of which he never fully recovered. He died two years later on June 29, 1852.

## DANIEL WEBSTER

It is said that with the first twenty-five cents he earned, Daniel Webster bought a handkerchief on which was printed the Constitution of the United States. He read it over and over until he knew it by heart, a knowledge which later proved of inestimable value to him in his career as American statesman and orator. Webster had a remarkable memory; he also knew much of the Bible by heart. His frail health during childhood made him unfit for heavy work. He passed a good part of the time hunting and fishing and reading all of the books in the village library. Webster was born at Salisbury, New Hampshire, January 18, 1782. His father, hoping that some day Daniel would be a Congressman, mortgaged his farm in order to send Daniel and his brother to school. Daniel refused a position as court clerk, although it offered an attractive salary, saying that he wanted to be a lawyer. When his father pointed out how crowded the profession was, Daniel made the familiar reply, "There is always room at the top."

Webster began his climb to the top with his admission to the bar in 1805. He gained a reputation for oratory and legal ability, and in 1812 the elder Webster's ambition was realized with his son's election to Congress. After two terms Webster returned to his law practice and, needing a larger field than he had in New Hampshire, moved to Boston. He became a leading constitutional lawyer and delivered several famous orations on special occasions, such as the 200th anniversary of the Pilgrims' landing at Plymouth and the laying of the corner-

stone of the Bunker Hill monument. He returned to Congress in 1823 and was made a senator in 1828.

Webster reached the peak of his career in 1830 when combatting the stand taken by the Southern senator, Robert Y. Hayne, advocating the right of a state to nullify acts of Congress. Webster's *Reply to Hayne* is almost unanimously considered the highest example of American oratory, comparable in its way to the oration, *On the Crown*, of the Greek orator Demosthenes. Webster continued in the Senate with little interruption except for two years as Secretary of State. His famous *Seventh of March Speech*, of 1850, ruined his chances for the presidency, but postponed civil war for ten years. In May, 1852, he was thrown from his carriage, and on October 24, he died of his injuries. *Fraser's Magazine* in 1890 said, "He was the greatest orator that ever lived in the Western Hemisphere."

## FRANZ SCHUBERT

Franz Liszt wrote of the Austrian composer Franz Peter Schubert. "He was the most poetical musician that ever was." Schubert was an extremely prolific composer of many types of music, but the compositions that immortalized him were his songs, which totaled nearly 500, and which are really the first modern songs. He composed rapidly with few revisions, and it was said that he could carry on a conversation while engaged in writing his best pieces. He sent the score of his *Unfinished Symphony* to a musical society director who kept it for forty-two years before he mentioned having it. Schubert never heard it performed.

Schubert was born near Vienna on January 31, 1797, and displayed his musical gifts at an early age. With his fine boy's voice he became a leading chorister, and after his voice broke he became a schoolmaster like his father. Teaching music brought him his first regular income, but he was poor all of his life. He died in Vienna from typhus on November 19, 1828, and was buried in a grave separated by only two others from that of Ludwig van Beethoven.

*Erlkönig, Gretchen am Spinnrad, Heidenröslein, Am Meer, Du bist die Ruh,* and *Ave Maria* are among the most beautiful of his songs

## ROBERT SCHUMANN

The German composer Robert Schumann began serious study of the piano at the age of twenty. However an accident to one hand made him give up the piano. Henceforth he devoted his time chiefly to composition and musical criticism. Outstanding among his works, which include orchestral, vocal and instrumental music, are those pieces in which the piano plays an important part. In his highly emotional songs he is the equal of Schubert. In 1835 he met Felix Mendelssohn, whom he regarded as the greatest living musician, and an intimate friendship developed between them. Schumann married Clara Wieck, the daughter of his old teacher. She was an accomplished pianist, and for several years she toured Europe, interpreting her husband's music to the public. Their marriage was one of extraordinary mutual devotion.

As early as 1833 Schumann had manifested unhealthy mental symptoms, and in 1854 he attempted to commit suicide by jumping into the Rhine. He was rescued but unmistakable insanity appeared, and the last two years of his life were passed in a sanitarium. He died on July 29, 1856 at the age of forty-six. *Frauenliebe und Leben* and *Dichterliebe* are cycles of songs that are outstanding. Other great Schumann works are his compositions for piano, his piano concerto, and his four symphonies.

## FRÉDÉRIC CHOPIN

Warsaw music lovers of 1818 hailed a nine-year-old boy as a child prodigy. The boy, Frédéric François Chopin, proved worthy of their acclaim, for he became one of the greatest of all composers of music for the piano.

Chopin was born in a Polish village, Zelazowa Wola, on March 1, 1809. His father was French and his mother the daughter of an impoverished Polish nobleman. At the age of fifteen Chopin had his music printed, and five years later he began a tour as a piano virtuoso. Paris adored him and sent him more wealthy young women as students than he was able to teach. After retiring from the concert stage in 1835, Chopin devoted his time to composition in spite of his failing health. Franz Liszt, Hector Berlioz, Heinrich Heine, Honoré de Balzac were his friends. His friendship with the famous French novelist George Sand produced some of the world's most noted love letters. He died of tuberculosis in Paris, October 17, 1849.

Chopin's works include seventy-four opus numbers, many of which are familiar and loved in the concert halls of the world.

## GEORGE SAND

George Sand, the pen name assumed by the French novelist Armantine Lucile Aurore, Baroness Dudevant, was born in Paris on July 5, 1804. She passed three years in a convent and then was married to Casimir Dudevant, from whom she separated in 1836. She formed a close attachment with Alfred de Musset, the poet. After deserting him for another, she cut off her hair and sent it to him as a token of repentance, but he never entirely forgave her. Another romance was with the musician Frédéric Chopin, to whom she was devoted for several years. She died on June 8, 1876.

The following books are representative of the four periods into which George Sand's work is divided: *Valentine*, *Jacques* and *Leone* (notable among novels colored largely by her marital difficulties); *Consuelo* (outstanding among her pleas for a socialistic revolution), *François le champi*, *La Petite Fadette* and *Les Maîtres sonneurs* (characteristic of her pastoral novels), and *Le Marquis de Villemer* and *Mlle. la Quintinie* (typifying the wider social studies of her fourth period).

## FELIX MENDELSSOHN

Felix Mendelssohn's talents as a composer and a pianist found such encouragement in his Hamburg home that he was giving piano concerts when he was nine and was noted for his improvisations at twelve. The now famous overture to *A Midsummer Night's Dream* was composed when he was seventeen. In 1829 he conducted a chorus of 350 voices in the *St. Matthew Passion* of Johann Sebastian Bach, which was the first known performance of a choral work of that composer since his death in 1750. Mendelssohn was made musical director of Dusseldorf in 1833 and two years later became conductor of the Leipzig Gewandhaus Orchestra, the highest musical position in Germany. Ill health forced him to retire in 1846 and he died on November 4 of the next year at the age of thirty-eight.

A trip to Scotland in 1829 was inspiration for Mendelssohn's *Scotch Symphony* and the *Hebrides* overture, his *Italian Symphony* reflects his recollections of Rome, Venice and Naples. His other works include the *Reformation Symphony* of 1832, the oratorio *Elijah*, and the *Concerto in E minor for violin and orchestra*.

## ARTHUR SCHOPENHAUER

The German pessimistic philosopher Arthur Schopenhauer was born on February 22, 1788, in Danzig. When Arthur was sixteen, his father died. The boy found the pursuit of his father's mercantile business distasteful and gave it up to study. After a period in the University of Berlin he lived in Dresden. Here he wrote *The World as Will and Idea*, which appeared in 1818. All of Schopenhauer's subsequent writing was further commentary upon the philosophy he advanced at this time. In 1844 he published a second edition of this book.

Schopenhauer believed that "the great man is not the conqueror, but he who denies the will to live." He, nevertheless, was inordinately careful of his own life. He fled from cholera

in Berlin from smallpox in Naples, and finally settled in Verona where he feared he had swallowed poison snuff. He passed his last twenty-seven years in Frankfort, living in terror of assassination and robbery. During the latter part of his life his work became recognized and he basked in the popularity which he had always wanted. He died at his breakfast table on September 21, 1860.

## BRIGHAM YOUNG

Brigham Young, Mormon leader, was born in Vermont, on June 1, 1801. Reared in unsettled western New York, he had no schooling but became a skillful jack-of-all-trades. In 1832, married and the father of two children, he was converted to Mormonism. In the following year he led a band of converts to Kirtland, Ohio, where he began his rise in the church. As a missionary, he traveled throughout the states, and even made one trip to England. In 1844 he succeeded to the presidency of the sect upon the death of Joseph Smith, the founder.

Young directed the historic migration which resulted, in 1848, in the founding of Salt Lake City, Utah. He also organized the life of the new settlement. Under him, the apparatus of church and state were identical. His sermons were mainly devoted to practical management down to the minutest detail. When the United States took over the Northwest Territories, he was appointed governor, but when the Federal government superseded him with another, he almost led his people to war against it. He died on August 29, 1877.

## SAM HOUSTON

Among the high lights of the career of Sam Houston, soldier and statesman, none glows more brightly than his performance as commander-in-chief of an army of 700 Texans, who, on

April 21, 1836, defeated an army of 8,000 Mexicans in the Battle of San Jacinto. Houston became involved in the affairs of Texas in 1832 and became the leader of the Texans in their movement to win freedom from Mexico. The independence of Texas was secured by the battle of that April day, and the hero of the conflict became the first president of the Republic of Texas.

Houston's road to this position had been a devious one. He was born near Lexington, Virginia, on March 2, 1793. When his family moved to Tennessee, their near neighbors were a tribe of Cherokee Indians. Houston lived among them for several years, was adopted by their chief and even thoroughly mastered their language, which philologists rank as the most difficult in the world. In 1811 he returned home, taught school for a time and then entered the army. He resigned his commission after being accused of smuggling Negroes into the States through Florida, although he was fully cleared of the charge. He settled in Nashville, Tennessee, and studied law, and in 1827 he was chosen governor of the state.

In January of 1829 Houston married, but three months later he abruptly resigned his governorship and disappeared, leaving his wife. The cause of the separation was never explained fully, but some letters found several years later indicated that his wife loved another man and that for her happiness Houston had sacrificed himself, giving up home, position and friends. The next three years Houston passed with his Indian friends. He took as a wife a half-breed woman with whom he lived until he returned to civilization. She refused to follow him. He sank to the lowest depths of his career during this time and was frequently called "Big Drunk" by the Indians. He left them to go to Texas.

Houston was re-elected president of Texas in 1841, and in 1845 when Texas was admitted to the Union, he became one of her first senators. He remained in the Senate until 1859, when he was elected governor of Texas. He was deposed in 1861 for adherence to the Union. After this he retired to his home in Huntsville, Texas, where he died on July 26, 1863.

## WILLIAM LLOYD GARRISON

The abolitionist William Lloyd Garrison, born on December 10, 1805, at Newburyport, Massachusetts, paid for his education, which was ended before he was fifteen, by sawing wood and doing other odd jobs after school. His life's work was begun in 1829 when he was made editor of the Baltimore paper called *The Genius of Universal Emancipation*. His arrest, following a libel suit based on his fiery editorials on emancipation, caused much comment even in the South, since it was considered interference with freedom of the press.

Garrison and his partner, Isaac Knapp, worked as typesetters to earn the money for the publication of a small paper, *The Liberator*, begun in 1831 and dedicated to the abolition of slavery. Garrison was threatened and molested and even attacked by a Boston mob, from which he was luckily rescued, but the paper continued to appear until after President Lincoln issued the emancipation proclamation. For twenty-two years Garrison also served as president of the American Anti-Slavery Society. The remainder of his life after the Civil War was peaceful. He died in New York City on May 24, 1879.

## HORACE GREELEY

The familiar newspaper man's story in which the hero works his way from a typesetter to owner and editor might well have been patterned after the life of Horace Greeley, for such was the route to his success. Greeley, who was born in Amherst, New Hampshire, on January 3, 1811, obtained his first job setting type on the *Erie Gazette*; his next was in a New York printer's shop. Because of his interest in public questions, he founded in 1834 a weekly literary paper, the *New Yorker*.

Greeley refused to join James Gordon Bennett in establishing the *Herald*, but on April 10, 1841, in New York, he launched his own paper, the *Daily Tribune*. This paper Greeley intended to be a moral and intellectual aid to its readers, but above all it was a political paper, dedicated to fighting the battles of

the Republican Party Greeley's last days were saddened by the severe illness and death of his wife. In addition, his defeat as the Democratic candidate for president in 1872 and the accusation that he had been disloyal to the Republican Party, hurt him deeply. Greeley died on November 29, 1872.

## SAMUEL FINLEY BREESE MORSE

While studying in Yale University, from which he was graduated in 1810, Samuel F. B. Morse first showed an interest in electricity, which eventually led to his invention of the telegraph. Morse was born in Charlestown, Massachusetts, on April 27, 1791. His early endeavors were in art, but his genuine talent in that field has been overshadowed in the popular mind by his inventive gifts. He was one of the founders of the National Academy of Design in 1825. Even after he took up scientific research, he remained one of the best of the early portrait painters. He painted Lafayette, Eli Whitney, and several fine pictures of women. One of his sitters described him at this time as the admiration of all the young ladies in New York, "notwithstanding he is a widower with three children, and here and there a gray hair."

In 1832 while returning from a European trip, Morse learned of experiments in France by which electricity had been transmitted long distances. A friend remarked that it would be wonderful if news could be sent that way. Morse replied, "Why can't it be?" He devoted the rest of the trip to working on his new problem. He evolved a code for the transmission of messages known as the "Morse Code," and finally completed the instrument upon which modern telegraphy is based, making his own models, molds and castings. On September 2, 1837, he successfully exhibited his apparatus at the University of the City of New York, where he was professor of the art of design, although he had almost stopped painting. Albert Vail, brass and iron worker in New Jersey, became interested in the invention and from then on was associated with Morse in his undertaking. Morse's application for a patent was rejected in

England and Russia. He obtained one in France, but the French government eventually appropriated his invention without compensating him. In 1843 Congress voted Morse \$30,000 to continue his work. He built an experimental line between Washington and Baltimore which was used for the first time on May 24, 1844.

Morse introduced in America the process of photography developed by Louis Daguerre, French painter and chemist. He also patented a marble-cutting machine and experimented with telegraphy by submarine cable. He was one of the founders of Vassar, a college for women in Poughkeepsie, New York. He was a friend of the novelist James Fenimore Cooper. His last public appearance was at the unveiling of the statue of Benjamin Franklin in Printing House Square, New York City, on January 17, 1872. He died in New York on April 2 of that year. "I have been told several times," he once wrote, "that I was born one hundred years too soon for the arts in our country."

## WILLIAM CULLEN BRYANT

The private prayers of William Cullen Bryant's boyhood differed from those taught to him in only one respect: they included a plea that he might be granted poetic genius and write verse that would endure. Born in western Massachusetts on November 3, 1794, Bryant began to write poems at an early age. His first version of *Thanatopsis*, one of his best loved and most famous poems, was composed when he was only eighteen years old. Other early verses were *Lines to a Waterfowl* and *To a Fringed Gentian*.

During nine years that Bryant practiced law he was constantly encouraged by his friends to continue his writing, both prose and verse. Eventually he settled in New York City and established connection with the *New York Evening Post* founded by Alexander Hamilton. His work in journalism, which lasted fifty years, and to which he finally gave more attention than to his creative writing, has been emphasized

less than has his poetry, although the two were considered of equal importance. His later work includes translations of Homer's *Iliad* and *Odyssey* and a few poems. He died on June 12, 1878. He had a clear, penetrating voice and was an eloquent speaker. His poetry had a religious tone and simple love of nature.

## THOMAS CARLYLE

Although Thomas Carlyle had little use for democracy, he was a prophet of moral earnestness. This British writer was born at Ecclefechan, Scotland, December 4, 1795. At thirteen he entered Edinburgh University, in 1814 he became a teacher of mathematics and as a teacher he remained in his writings. Dyspepsia hounded him, accounting for his bad temper. In 1821 he met Jane Welsh whom he later married. "For forty years she was the true and loving helpmate of her husband," he wrote on her tomb, "and by act and word unwearily forwarded him as none else could."

Germany interested and influenced Carlyle. Johann Wolfgang Goethe, its greatest writer, aroused his enthusiasm and corresponded with him. "His is the only healthy mind," said Carlyle, "that I have discovered in Europe for long generations." In 1828 the Carlyles retired to a lonely farm where the author wrote his most original work, *Sartor Resartus*. Then they settled in London in a large old house wherein both of them died—Jane in 1865 and Thomas on February 5, 1881. Carlyle's important works include *Heroes and Hero Worship*, *The French Revolution* and *Life of Frederick the Great*.

## RALPH WALDO EMERSON

A poet whose happiest literary form was the essay, and who found his power and won his fame on the lecture platform, Ralph Waldo Emerson gave voice to the love of liberty and

fearless loyalty to ideals that characterized his native New England. Born of a gifted family which included a number of clergymen, he seems to have inherited the additional qualities of strenuous virtue, self-reliance, sincerity and sobriety.

Emerson was born on May 25, 1803, in Boston. His record at Harvard was undistinguished except by his winning of prizes in literature and oratory. After his graduation in 1821, he taught for three years at his brother's school for young ladies. Dissatisfied with teaching, he entered Divinity School at Cambridge. In 1820 he became assistant pastor of the Second Church (Unitarian) of Boston. In the same year he married Ellen Tucker who died in 1832. In that year he resigned the ministry and, after a trip to England in 1833, began his career as a lecturer.

His lectures and his essays reflected his tastes in reading—poetry and mystical philosophy, biography and anecdote. His principles were democratic while his tastes were aristocratic and so, while he took a sincere interest in social and political reform, toward specific reforms he was remote and visionary. His style was both precious and epigrammatic. When the Civil War broke out, although never an Abolitionist, he actively supported the Union cause; he had taken his stand a few years earlier when he said: "I think we must get rid of slavery or we must get rid of freedom." He was at his prime during the Civil War, "keen physically and morally magnetic," as the younger poet Walt Whitman described him.

In 1845 Emerson had remarried and, two years later, he had revisited Europe. Now in his later years he retired to Concord where he won the affection of all. When, in 1872, his house burned down, it was rebuilt by popular subscription. After his return from a trip to Egypt in 1873, he withdrew from practically all activity to the day of his death, April 27, 1882.

## HENRY DAVID THOREAU

Henry David Thoreau was the only one of the early Concord, Massachusetts, writers who was a native of that town. He was

born there on July 12 1817 In spite of financial difficulties he succeeded in being graduated from Harvard in 1837 The poet Jones Very, who was at that time an instructor in Greek at Harvard, was Thoreau's tutor Thoreau was reputed to have been the outstanding Greek scholar among the Transcendentalists, a group composed of Ralph Waldo Emerson and his followers In addition to Greek literature, the young student also was influenced by sixteenth and seventeenth century English poets, Oriental scriptures, Emerson and Thomas Carlyle Thoreau did not enter a profession For a time he taught school in Concord, but, not wishing to be bound by any occupation, he turned eventually to earning his livelihood through surveying, pencil-making and other odd jobs

Thoreau did not make up his mind to become a writer until 1840 For a time he lived with Emerson, and it is said that he not only copied Emerson's style of writing, but also even imitated his way of speech During his life Thoreau published only two books The first of these, *A Week on the Concord and Merrimack Rivers*, appeared in 1849 and gained scant notice The second, *Walden*, in 1854, fared little better, but it is now considered one of the finest books of its type in American literature Among Thoreau's articles and addresses published in magazines is one, *Civil Disobedience*, which Mahatma Gandhi, the contemporary Indian leader, read in 1907 and from it got an idea for his policy of non-violence in India Thoreau was an Abolitionist and was once jailed for refusing to pay a poll tax to a government which permitted slavery His family paid the tax, and Thoreau was released

The majority of Thoreau's works were not published until after his death from tuberculosis, on May 6, 1862 He is esteemed today, however, as one of the most original thinkers and one of the best prose writers of his time Thoreau's attitude toward industrial inventions, many of which appeared to him as "improved means to an unimproved end," is of peculiar interest in connection with present world conditions A famous saying of his is "I never found the companion that was so companionable as solitude."

## NATHANIEL HAWTHORNE

The boyhood of the novelist Nathaniel Hawthorne would be of interest to a modern psychologist. Hawthorne was born on the Fourth of July, 1804, in Salem, Massachusetts, and his father died when the boy was only four years old. His mother lived in seclusion for the rest of her life, even taking her meals apart from her children. Hawthorne had few boyhood acquaintances; for companionship and entertainment he depended upon books, the most influential of which probably were Sir Walter Scott's novels. Among his friends at Bowdoin College which he entered when he was seventeen, were Henry W. Longfellow, the poet and Franklin Pierce, later a president of the United States. While in college Hawthorne decided upon a literary career, but after graduation he retired to Salem, where he lived in seclusion for the next twelve years. *Twice Told Tales*, his first publication of importance appeared in 1837 and attracted favorable attention.

For a time Hawthorne was engaged as a weigher and gauger at the Boston Custom House, but this work left him little leisure or energy for writing. In 1841 he invested his slender savings, and lost them, in the Brook Farm community, an idealistic enterprise. The next year, however, he married Sophia Peabody, and the couple managed to obtain, rent free, the historic Old Manse in Concord where Ralph W. Emerson had once lived. Hawthorne served for a period as head of the Salem Custom House, but a political shake-up left him without a job, thereby enabling him to devote more time to his writing.

The erstwhile writer of only fairly popular short stories developed into a successful novelist. After the appearance of *The Scarlet Letter* in 1850, Hawthorne moved to Lenox, in the Berkshire Hills, where he became acquainted with the novelist Herman Melville. *The House of the Seven Gables* was published in 1851, followed the next year by *The Blithedale Romance*. Hawthorne's reward for a campaign biography of Franklin Pierce was an appointment as United States Consul at Liverpool, a post which he resigned in 1856. He remained abroad, however, until 1860, in which year *The Marble Faun*

appeared This, together with *Our Old Home* and the French and Italian *Notebooks*, composed the chief works of his later years. He was writing two romances which were left unfinished at his death in 1864

## ✓ EDGAR ALLAN POE

The poet and story writer Edgar Allan Poe once wrote that in "America . . . more than in any other region upon the face of the globe, to be poor is to be despised" His opinion was founded upon ample personal experience, for his irregular and unhappy life, although given a seemingly fortuitous beginning, was filled with poverty and hardships Poe was born in Boston on January 19, 1809 Upon the early death of his parents he was taken to live with the family of John Allan, a merchant in Richmond, Virginia His education included a year at the University of Virginia, where he began gambling and drinking A quarrel with his foster father over this and other matters ended by Poe's leaving Richmond in 1827 penniless and practically disowned by Allan, who was then a wealthy man He went to Boston, where he published his first volume of poems *Tamerlane and Other Poems*, estimated by some to be the most valuable collector's item in American literature today At the time neither this nor two later volumes of poetry attracted much notice

Poe next served in the Army and subsequently entered the United States Military Academy at West Point, from which he soon got himself dismissed He then lived in Baltimore with an aunt, whose daughter Virginia he later married During this time he wrote short stories with some success and in 1835 returned to Richmond as editorial assistant on the literary magazine *Messenger* He became an expert magazine writer and continued in this field following his move to Philadelphia in 1837 His weird stories are supreme in the field of horror literature

The last five years of Poe's life were passed in New York City The first of his poems to attract any attention was *The*

*Raven*, which appeared in January of 1845. In that year Poe became one of the editors of the *Broadway Journal*, but the magazine was unsuccessful. Poe was ill much of the remainder of his life. Virginia died in 1847, and from that time on his drinking increased and he struggled feebly against weakness and opium. In 1849 he made a visit to Richmond, during which he became re-engaged to a former sweetheart. On his return journey he was found delirious on the streets of Baltimore and died there on October 7.

## HENRY WADSWORTH LONGFELLOW

Portland, Maine, claims the distinction of having as her son one of America's best-loved poets, Henry Wadsworth Longfellow, who was born in that city on February 27, 1807. He prepared for college at the Portland Academy and entered Bowdoin in 1821.

Although during his last college days Longfellow gave serious consideration to the idea of a life devoted to literary pursuits, he began the study of law in his father's office after his graduation in 1825. An invitation to teach modern languages at his Alma Mater came almost immediately. This work was preceded by a European tour for study and observation, during which he met Washington Irving, author of the *Sketch Book*. This volume, which he read when he was twelve, was the one book that fascinated Longfellow as a child and perhaps gave him the first glimpse of his own poetic talent.

The term of professorship at Bowdoin was punctuated by writing which won distinction for the young author both at home and abroad and led to an offer, when he was not yet twenty-eight, to teach modern languages and literature at Harvard. Again he went to Europe in preparation for his work. On this trip he was introduced to such notable figures as Carlyle and Robert Browning. He was accompanied by his wife, who died in Rotterdam. The next summer in Switzerland he met Frances Elizabeth Appleton, of Boston, who became his second wife in 1843.

In 1836 Longfellow took up his position at Harvard which he held for eighteen years. The Harvard period saw the beginning of his real poetic achievements. His best-known poems, such as *Evangeline*, *The Courtship of Miles Standish* and *The Song of Hiawatha*, were composed during this time. In addition to these were innumerable shorter poems such as *Hymn to the Night*, *Wreck of the Hesperus*, *The Village Blacksmith* and *The Midnight Ride of Paul Revere*, and work on the trilogy *Christus* which bears a more intimate relation to Longfellow's personal life than any of his other writings.

A second domestic tragedy occurred in July, 1861, when Mrs. Longfellow's summer dress was ignited by a candle and she was fatally burned before help could reach her. When he was able to resume work after this sorrow, Longfellow began his translation of Dante's *The Divine Comedy*, which he finished in 1870. This was the author's last important work. He died at his home in Cambridge on March 24, 1882.

## JOHN GREENLEAF WHITTIER

John Greenleaf Whittier, who was born in Haverhill, Massachusetts, on December 17, 1807, began his career simply as a local poet. He overcame many obstacles in order to attain his later eminence. His early poems were published in country newspapers, but his father was not sympathetic, and it is asserted that he discouraged his son's literary aspirations on the grounds that poetry would not give him bread. Greenleaf was permitted to attend school only after he had injured his health by doing farm work that was too heavy for him. He was never able to go to college, but instead engaged in editorial work on newspapers and magazines. His poor health frequently forced him to give up his work and return to the farm to recuperate. He published *Legends of New England, in Prose and Verse* in 1831.

In 1833 the poet engaged in the antislavery movement, although he well knew that this might mean the ruin of his poetic career and his political ambitions. When he first allied himself

with this cause, he believed that he should give up his poetry, not realizing until later the propaganda value of verse. Critics consider a few of his poems in this field, notably *Massachusetts to Virginia*, to be not only propaganda but also genuine poetry.

Whittier did not confine himself entirely to the abolitionist movement. He was also writing a few of his best short poems and, beginning in 1857, some of his works were published in the *Atlantic Monthly*. After the Civil War he was free once more to devote his best efforts to verse. In several ways Whittier was handicapped in his chosen field. He was color blind to reds and greens, and in his later years he was partially deaf. Although he was attractive to both women and men, moral passion rather than sensuality seems to have been uppermost in his character and poems. *Snowbound*, probably the best loved of Whittier's works, was published in 1866. Other volumes appeared after this, but his outstanding contributions had already been made. He was interested in other reforms, but none took the place of the antislavery cause. Until his death in 1892 he enjoyed numerous honors that were fitting compensations for the many hardships he had endured.

## OLIVER WENDELL HOLMES

The historic house at Cambridge in which the Battle of Bunker Hill was planned was the birthplace of the American poet Oliver Wendell Holmes on August 29, 1809. He attended Harvard and was graduated in 1829. The next year he wrote the patriotic lyric *Old Ironsides*, literally saving the frigate Constitution from being scrapped, and gaining a wide reputation. Holmes, an extremely versatile man, first studied law and then medicine, receiving his M.D. degree in 1836. His work in this latter field included experiments in the use of the microscope. Later he invented a small stereoscope for hand use. He married in 1840 and seven years later became professor of anatomy and physiology at Harvard. He wrote a life of Emerson and was a close friend of James Russell Lowell, John G. Whittier and Harriet Beecher Stowe. To the latter he

wrote "I know that you will remain always thoroughly and entirely womanly, charitable, hopeful"

*The Chambered Nautilus* and *The Last Leaf* are the poems by which he is best remembered, but it was the success of *The Autocrat of the Breakfast Table* that marked the beginning of a new life in the field of literature for the doctor-author. A large part of his literary output was verse for special occasions. His sense of humor and love of country were outstanding traits. He died in Boston on October 7, 1894.

## JAMES RUSSELL LOWELL

After his graduation from Harvard in 1838, the poet James Russell Lowell took up the study of law because to him, like to many another youth with poetic inclinations, there did not seem to be anything else to do. After he was admitted to the bar, his clients were not numerous, and he continued writing. Prior to the Civil War, Lowell was one of the banner-bearers of the antislavery movement. In this period he published some of his best known works: *The Vision of Sir Launfal*, *A Fable for Critics*, and the first series of *The Biglow Papers*.

In 1855 Lowell was appointed to succeed Henry W. Longfellow as Smith Professor of Modern Languages at Harvard, where he continued to teach for the greater part of the next twenty years. Lowell served as the first editor of the *Atlantic Monthly*, in which he published a second series of *The Biglow Papers*, and as a joint editor of the *North American Review*. He also was minister to Spain and later to England, where he was extremely popular. In 1885 he retired to his birthplace, Cambridge, Massachusetts, where he died on August 12, 1891, at the age of seventy-two.

## STEPHEN COLLINS FOSTER

Stephen Collins Foster, American song writer, was born in Pittsburgh, Pa., on July 4, 1826, of a prosperous, middle-class

family Spurning college, he went to work as a bookkeeper. After four years of that, he discovered that he could earn his living by his musical talent. For a time he was a minstrel performer and his music was written solely for that medium. He turned out his songs with amazing rapidity and some of them were worthless. But his best work showed an almost magic gift for mellifluous phrasing, and gave powerful expression to the nostalgic melancholy of the Negro people. Among his most successful songs were *Swanee River*, *My Old Kentucky Home*, *Old Black Joe*, *O Susanna*, *Old Dog Tray*, *Nelly Was a Lady*, and *Away Down South* (in Dixie).

He was married in 1850, but he and his wife had separated when, in 1860, he went to New York City. There he passed his remaining years in poverty and heavy drinking. He continued to write songs, but few of them survive. He died in Bellevue Hospital on January 13, 1864.

## HARRIET BEECHER STOWE

Following a visit to the home of her brother Henry Ward Beecher, during which the most frequent topic of conversation was slavery, Harriet Beecher Stowe received a letter from her sister-in-law, who wrote "Now, Harriet, if I could use a pen as you can, I would write something that would make this whole nation feel what an accursed thing slavery is." That was the incentive for her novel *Uncle Tom's Cabin*, the most influential contribution of American literature to the emancipation movement.

The author of this famous book was born at Litchfield, Connecticut, on June 13, 1811. She learned to sew and knit, and she was permitted to read such material as prayer books, hymns, poems and sermons, but she read everything she could get her hands on, including *The Arabian Nights*, which she discovered for herself and secretly enjoyed.

The question of slavery was brought to Mrs. Stowe's attention by a visit to a Kentucky estate that she later used as the

setting for *Uncle Tom's Cabin*, and by passing eighteen years in Cincinnati, where runaway slaves were constantly crossing the river. In 1835 she married Professor Calvin E. Stowe. Mrs. Stowe was a devoted wife and mother. Her husband became a professor at Bowdoin College, Brunswick, Maine, in 1849. Later they lived at Andover, Massachusetts. Mrs. Stowe died on July 1, 1896.

## ABRAHAM LINCOLN

Abraham Lincoln, the sixteenth President of the United States, was born on a farm about fourteen miles from Elizabethtown in the backwoods of Kentucky, on February 12, 1809. His education consisted of less than one year's formal schooling, but with the aid of his mother he learned to read and study at home. In the frontier environment of Indiana and Illinois, to which the family later migrated, Abe developed physically, too, when he was twenty-one he was six feet, four inches tall, and a matchless wrestler, runner, and weight-lifter.

He was a storekeeper in New Salem, Ill., in 1832, when he ran, unsuccessfully, on the Whig ticket for election to the state legislature. Two years later he was elected and served two terms. The death of Ann Rutledge, a beautiful girl to whom he was engaged, saddened him. In 1837 he was admitted to the bar after studying at home for six years, and moved to Springfield where he married Mary Todd in 1842 and was elected in 1844 to the United States House of Representatives. When slavery became the issue of the day, Lincoln took the stand in opposition to its extension and expressed his views at the founding convention of the Illinois Republican party in 1856. Two years later, during a campaign for United States Senator, he confounded his opponent in a series of debates. Stephen A. Douglas won the election by vote of the state legislature, but Lincoln had obtained a majority of the popular vote and had laid the groundwork for his victory in the presidential election.

In 1860 Lincoln was elected President. In the years of the

Civil War that followed he earned the cognomen, Preserver of His Country. Two documents stand out as testimonials to his greatness in those days: the Emancipation Proclamation which he issued on January 1, 1863 and the Gettysburg Address, delivered at the dedication of the historic battlefield, November 19, 1863. His proposals for the establishment of peace are also monuments to his humanity and genius. In 1864 he was re-elected by a large majority. Yet all rancor had not died away, and soon after victory over the Confederacy he was shot by an obscure actor, John Wilkes Booth, at Ford's Theater, in Washington. The following day, April 15, 1865, Lincoln died. One of the most moving expressions of grief of the many that swept over the country was the mourning poem of Walt Whitman, *O Captain! My Captain*.

## JEFFERSON DAVIS

Jefferson Davis, president of the Confederate States of America, was born in Kentucky on June 3, 1808. After being graduated from the United States Military Academy in 1828, Davis remained in the Army, serving chiefly in Wisconsin. There he had a severe attack of pneumonia that left him with a facial neuralgia by which he was frequently incapacitated and sometimes blinded. After resigning his Army commission, Davis married and moved to Mississippi. His bride died within three months of their marriage.

In 1845 Davis re-married and in the same year was elected to the House of Representatives. His work there was only started when war with Mexico broke out, and he returned to the Army. His regiment fought well, and after the war Davis was nationally known. He again took up his duties in Congress, this time in the Senate, and later served under President Pierce as Secretary of War. When he re-entered the Senate in 1857, the question of slavery was becoming more and more important. Davis, whose Negroes on his Mississippi plantation had been well-treated and contented, could not believe in the reality of the abuses attributed to the system. He maintained

that the Southern states had a right to secede, and upon the triumph of the Republican Party with Lincoln's election, he became convinced of the necessity of secession.

Following the withdrawal of his own state from the Union, Davis left the Senate in 1861. He was inaugurated President of the Confederate States in 1862 and was holding that office when the Confederacy collapsed. Davis was judged severely by some of his contemporaries, but he was, nevertheless, one of the strongest forces in the South during the four years in which it maintained the struggle with an enemy much better equipped. The mistreatment that Davis suffered at the hands of his northern foes after his capture in 1865 served to make him somewhat of a martyr and to restore him to his former place in the affections of the South. During his last years Davis visited Europe, served as president of an insurance company and wrote two books, but he declined any part in politics. He died in New Orleans on December 6, 1889.

## ROBERT EDWARD LEE

As a cadet officer and then adjutant of the corps during his last school year, Robert Edward Lee, the great Confederate general, began his military career at West Point. He was graduated from the United States Military Academy in 1829, second in a class of fifty-six. Lee was married to Mary Custis at Arlington House, Virginia, on June 30, 1831.

Lee took an active part in the war with Mexico as chief engineer of the United States Army and was made a colonel for gallantry in the battle at Chapultepec, where he was wounded. He served as superintendent of the Academy at West Point from 1852 to 1855. In 1859 a company of marines which he commanded captured John Brown, abolitionist, at Harper's Ferry.

When the Civil War broke out Lee was offered command of the United States Army, but he tendered his resignation on April 20, 1861, and three days later was nominated by acclamation as commander-in-chief of the Virginia forces. Lee was in

direct command of the Army defending Richmond in June of 1862. Two months later he was promoted to general. It was not until February 9, 1865, after the Southern cause had already become hopeless, that he was appointed commander-in-chief of all the military forces of the Confederacy.

Lee surrendered to Ulysses S. Grant, commander of the Union forces, at Appomattox on April 9, 1865. It was the first time the two generals had met since they served together in Mexico. The next day Lee sadly took leave of his troops and proceeded to Richmond where he was received with an ovation. Lee remained in retirement at his home at Brookhill near Richmond for some time, refusing a number of business offers. He finally accepted the presidency of Washington College (now Washington and Lee University), at Lexington, Virginia. He succeeded in bringing the college from a state of near collapse to prosperity.

Lee was born at Stratford, Virginia, on January 9, 1807. His unexpected death occurred on October 12, 1870. He had taken his place at the head table with his family to ask a blessing on the meal when he was stricken with convulsion of the brain. His wife, three sons and four daughters survived. His body rests beneath the chapel of Washington and Lee University.

## ULYSSES SIMPSON GRANT

When the Civil War broke out Ulysses Simpson Grant was clerking in his brother's store in Galena, Illinois, poverty-stricken, shabbily dressed and apparently doomed to failure and obscurity. This man, who had been unsuccessful in farming and had failed in several business ventures, soon became a famous general, and several years later he was inaugurated as the eighteenth president of the United States. Grant, who was originally named Hiram Ulysses, was born on April 27, 1822. When he entered the United States Military Academy at West Point, at the age of seventeen, his name was erroneously listed "Ulysses Simpson Grant." The error was never corrected, and he became known by that name, the initials of which gave

rise at various periods to the nicknames of "Uncle Sam," "United States" and "Unconditional Surrender." Grant saw active service in the war with Mexico, and he was sent next to the Northwest. At this point Grant, who was then a captain, left the army because further promotion seemed impossible and the pay was small, but when the Civil War came, he said "The government educated me for the army, and although I have served through one war, I am still in debt to the government, and willing to discharge the obligation."

Grant's first major victory was the capture of Fort Donelson, to the commander of which he sent his famous message "No terms except unconditional and immediate surrender can be accepted. I propose to move immediately upon your works." Grant progressed to posts of danger and responsibility until on March 2, 1864, he was made lieutenant general and a few days later took command of the armies of the United States. The conflict ended on April 9, 1865, with the surrender at Appomattox of General Robert E. Lee, commander of the Confederate forces.

He was inaugurated as president of the United States in 1869 and was re-elected for a second term. At its close he made a tour of the world. In 1884 Grant, who had once managed the affairs of a nation, was swindled to the point of bankruptcy. The last year of his life was one of his most heroic. In spite of intense suffering caused by cancer of the throat, he wrote his autobiography, hoping that its sale would produce funds for his wife. He died on July 23, 1885, and after an impressive service his body was laid in a mausoleum on Riverside Drive, New York City, overlooking the Hudson River.

## FLORENCE NIGHTINGALE

Florence Nightingale raised nursing to the dignity of a branch of medicine and a profession in itself. She was born of wealthy English parents in Florence, Italy, on May 12, 1820. When she was twenty-four she horrified her family by her decision to adopt nursing as a career. After a period of study

in Europe, she became superintendent of a London hospital in 1853.

In 1854, when England was stirred by reports of horrible suffering among the sick and wounded soldiers fighting in the Crimean War, Miss Nightingale was sent with a staff of thirty-eight (later increased to 10,000) to supervise the work of caring for them. Indomitable will and a genius for organization enabled her to overcome great odds, and soon a tremendous decrease was effected in the death rate.

Her war work brought her royal honors, fame and financial assistance for her peacetime projects which were mainly centers for the training of nurses. Her manner of living was quiet but active. She died on August 13, 1910.

## CLARA BARTON

Clara Barton, founder of the American Red Cross, was born in North Oxford, Massachusetts, on December 25, 1821. At Bordentown, New Jersey, she organized the first free school in that state. After failing health forced her to resign from this work, Miss Barton obtained a position in the Patent Office in Washington, where she worked until the outbreak of the Civil War.

Leaving Worcester, Massachusetts, to visit her brother, who had been taken prisoner by the Confederates, Miss Barton inserted a notice in the paper offering to carry gifts from other families to their wounded relatives. Before the war was over, she had a building filled with such material and was the recognized agent of communication between the soldiers and their people. The government assisted her in her work, and after the war President Lincoln appointed her as head of a bureau organized to locate 80,000 men listed as missing in action.

In 1869 Clara Barton went to Switzerland to rest. There she first heard of the Red Cross Society, which she promptly joined. Her rest consisted of strenuous relief work. In 1881 Miss Barton succeeded in establishing an American branch of the

Red Cross and served as its president for many years. She had an amendment instituted which broadened the scope of the society's work to include not only war but also disasters. Her duties carried her to such scenes as Michigan forest fires, Mississippi valley floods, a drouth in Texas and a cyclone on the Sea Islands of South Carolina. Clara Barton died on April 17, 1912

## CHARLES DARWIN

The greatest English naturalist of the nineteenth century. Charles Robert Darwin, was born at Shrewsbury, February 12, 1809. His mother was the daughter of Josiah Wedgwood, the famous potter. His father hoped that he would enter the ministry, but after his graduation from Christ's College, Cambridge, in 1831, Darwin went around the world as a naturalist on the H M S *Beagle*. This voyage lasted nearly five years.

From 1838 to 1841 Darwin was secretary to the Geological Society and was in frequent contact with the geologist Sir Charles Lyell, whose book *Principles of Geology* played an important part in paving the way for Darwin's work. During his world tour he made a study of the fauna of the Galapagos Islands which implanted the idea of evolution in his mind. In 1858 his paper on the theory of natural selection was read to the Linnaean Society of London. This was primarily an explanation of the adaptability of animals and plants, but it led to the acceptance of the theory of evolution. The method of work and the aims of natural history were revolutionized following the publication in 1859 of Darwin's most outstanding book, *The Origin of Species*, of which the entire first edition of 1,250 copies was sold in one day. *The Variation of Animals and Plants under Domestication*, published in 1868, ranks second in importance among the naturalist's books. He extended his general thesis to man in 1871 with the writing of *The Descent of Man and Selection in Relation to Sex*. These books aroused religious and educational leaders to storms of

controversy in which one of Darwin's ablest defenders was the English biologist Thomas Huxley.

Darwin married in 1839 and in 1842 moved from London to Down where he passed the rest of his life, the latter years of which he devoted to the demonstration of his theories. He made a constant endeavor to keep an unbiased mind in order to give up any hypothesis as soon as facts were shown to be opposed to it. He took care of his own correspondence, even replying courteously to a young man preparing a lecture who requested an abbreviated statement of Darwin's views. The youth said he did not have time to read the scientist's books. Darwin received the Prussian order *Pour le Mérite* in 1871 and became a member of the French Academy in 1878. He died on April 19, 1882.

## MICHAEL FARADAY

Michael Faraday, British chemist and physicist, is ranked as one of the most brilliant experimentalists science has ever known. His researches included many branches of science. In the field of physics his name is familiar to every student, in chemistry his discoveries included a number of new chemical compounds. His work in electricity made possible magneto and dynamo machines, and his studies in electrolysis were of great value.

This scientist the son of a blacksmith, was born near London on September 22, 1791. He received practically no education and was apprenticed to a bookbinder. He studied science in his leisure time. In 1812 he attended the lectures of the chemist Sir Humphry Davy, and subsequently asked him for some scientific occupation. Sir Humphry made Faraday his assistant. In 1833 Faraday was appointed professor of chemistry in the Royal Institution, in 1837 he received a pension of \$1,500 a year for his services in science. He lectured at the Royal Academy, refused the presidency of the Royal Society and was a knight of several European orders. He was religious, generous and sympathetic. He died on August 23, 1867.

## CHARLES DICKENS

Dickens's poverty-stricken childhood strengthened his determination to succeed and played an influential part in shaping the career of England's most popular novelist. He was born at Landport on February 7, 1812, and was christened Charles John Huffam Dickens. His early days were passed in Chatham where as a rather frail boy he occupied his time reading textbooks of the Baptist minister's library and novels from his father's collection of English literature. When the father was thrown into debtor's prison, his mother, with a family of eight to provide for, used Charles in menial tasks at home and sent him to work in his spare time at a warehouse. There are hints of this dismal period in *David Copperfield*.

An interval as a solicitor's clerk was succeeded by newspaper and Parliamentary reporting. He wrote magazine sketches illustrated by George Cruikshank, English caricaturist, and signed them with the pen name "Boz." Dickens was married on April 2, 1836, and the foundation for his literary endeavors was laid successfully with *Pickwick Papers* in 1836-37. Next came *Oliver Twist*, then *Nicholas Nickleby*, *The Old Curiosity Shop*, and *Martin Chuzzlewit*. The famous *Christmas Carol* was also of this period.

Dickens took his family to Genoa in 1844. He returned to London to be the first editor of the *Daily News* and then passed some months in Switzerland where he began the writing of *Dombey and Son*. Subsequently he settled once more in London and in 1849 *David Copperfield* appeared, followed by *Bleak House* and *A Tale of Two Cities*. In 1850 he began the editorship of the magazine *Household Words*. He held the position until 1859 when he took over a similar periodical, *All the Year Round*. The writing of *Our Mutual Friend* was completed in 1865.

Dickens had embarked on a new field—the detective story whose hero was Edwin Drood—when he died suddenly in the year 1870. A tour of America in 1867, on which he gave readings from his works, had taxed his strength, but he had dis-

controversy in which one of Darwin's ablest defenders was the English biologist Thomas Huxley

Darwin married in 1839 and in 1842 moved from London to Down, where he passed the rest of his life, the latter years of which he devoted to the demonstration of his theories. He made a constant endeavor to keep an unbiased mind in order to give up any hypothesis as soon as facts were shown to be opposed to it. He took care of his own correspondence, even replying conscientiously to a young man preparing a lyceum lecture who requested an abbreviated statement of Darwin's views. The youth said he did not have time to read the scientist's books. Darwin received the Prussian order *Pour le Mérite* in 1871 and became a member of the French Academy in 1878. He died on April 19, 1882.

## ✓MICHAEL FARADAY

✓ Michael Faraday, British chemist and physicist, is ranked as one of the most brilliant experimentalists science has ever known. His researches included many branches of science. In the field of physics his name is familiar to every student, in chemistry his discoveries included a number of new chemical compounds. His work in electricity made possible magneto and dynamo machines, and his studies in electrolysis were of great value.

This scientist, the son of a blacksmith, was born near London on September 22, 1791. He received practically no education and was apprenticed to a bookbinder. He studied science in his leisure time. In 1812 he attended the lectures of the chemist Sir Humphry Davy, and subsequently asked him for some scientific occupation. Sir Humphry made Faraday his assistant. In 1833 Faraday was appointed professor of chemistry in the Royal Institution, in 1835 he received a pension of \$1,500 a year for his services in science. He lectured at the Royal Academy, refused the presidency of the Royal Society and was a knight of several European orders. He was religious, generous and sympathetic. He died on August 25, 1867.

## CHARLES DICKENS

Dickens's poverty-stricken childhood strengthened his determination to succeed and played an influential part in shaping the career of England's most popular novelist. He was born at Landport on February 7, 1812, and was christened Charles John Huffam Dickens. His early days were passed in Chatham where as a rather frail boy he occupied his time reading textbooks of the Baptist minister's library and novels from his father's collection of English literature. When the father was thrown into debtor's prison, his mother, with a family of eight to provide for, used Charles in menial tasks at home and sent him to work in his spare time at a warehouse. There are hints of this dismal period in *David Copperfield*.

An interval as a solicitor's clerk was succeeded by newspaper and Parliamentary reporting. He wrote magazine sketches illustrated by George Cruikshank, English caricaturist, and signed them with the pen name "Boz." Dickens was married on April 2, 1836, and the foundation for his literary endeavors was laid successfully with *Pickwick Papers* in 1836-37. Next came *Oliver Twist*, then *Nicholas Nickleby*, *The Old Curiosity Shop*, and *Martin Chuzzlewit*. The famous *Christmas Carol* was also of this period.

Dickens took his family to Genoa in 1844. He returned to London to be the first editor of the *Daily News* and then passed some months in Switzerland where he began the writing of *Dombey and Son*. Subsequently he settled once more in London and in 1849 *David Copperfield* appeared, followed by *Bleak House* and *A Tale of Two Cities*. In 1850 he began the editorship of the magazine *Household Words*. He held the position until 1859 when he took over a similar periodical, *All the Year Round*. The writing of *Our Mutual Friend* was completed in 1865.

Dickens had embarked on a new field—the detective story whose hero was Edwin Drood—when he died suddenly in the year 1870. A tour of America in 1867, on which he gave readings from his works, had taxed his strength, but he had dis-

regarded warning symptoms of ill health. He was buried in the Poets' Corner of Westminster Abbey.

## WILLIAM MAKEPEACE THACKERAY

William Makepeace Thackeray, British author, was born in Calcutta, India, on July 18, 1811. He was sent to England to school, where he entered Trinity College in 1829 and left the next year without taking a degree. Thackeray went to Paris to study art. He never became a great painter but he did become an excellent illustrator. His marriage in 1836 did not bring him much happiness; for four years later his wife became ill and her mind failed.

The young man returned to London in 1837 and wrote for *Fraser's Magazine*. With the publication of the *Snob Papers* in *Punch* in 1846 his reputation was established. *Vanity Fair*, completed in 1848, placed him in the first rank as a novelist and gave its name to a new magazine. This was followed by *Pendennis*; *Henry Esmond*, considered by some to be his most perfect work; and *The Newcomes*.

Thackeray delivered a series of lectures in 1851 which he repeated in America in 1852 and 1853. These lectures provided a theme for some of the most amusing of his caricatures. He was an unsuccessful candidate for Parliament in 1857. Then he became editor of the *Cornhill Magazine*. He resigned the position in 1862, although he continued to write for the magazine until his sudden death on December 24, 1863. He was buried in Kensal Green and only a bust to his memory was placed in Westminster Abbey.

## QUEEN VICTORIA

Queen Victoria shaped the manners and customs of her country for almost a century and made the British Crown a

symbol of royal rectitude and private virtue. She was born at Kensington Palace on May 24, 1819, the only child of Edward, Duke of Kent, the fourth son of King George III. The duke had married late, when it was evident his older brothers would have no heir. Her father's death left her from infancy in the complete care of her German mother who reared her in convent-like seclusion, never allowing her to read novels. She also had a German governess.

Her accession to the throne on June 20, 1837 opened up a period of gaiety and social festivity, as Victoria began to express her own personality, and her willfulness brought her into almost immediate conflict with her cabinet. But her marriage, on February 10, 1840, to her cousin the German Prince Albert, wrought an almost complete change in her public and private life. Her husband became her political mentor, her spiritual guide and the object of her unqualified devotion, she became a convert to the moral primness that characterized her subsequent life. Nine children were born to them, including Princess Victoria, the mother of Kaiser Wilhelm II of Germany and the Prince of Wales who succeeded his mother to the throne as Edward VII. Albert's death in 1861 was a blow that profoundly affected the rest of her long life. She observed years of mourning.

Victoria's long reign was an active one and throughout she took a leading part in governmental affairs. Developments occasionally found her on the losing side of an issue, but when such an issue was decided, she was astute enough to make the winning side her own. Thus she never lost favor, to any great extent, with her people. The aging 'Widow of Windsor' became a national institution. Generally, liberalism scored many gains at home, under her rule, while imperialism expanded the British Empire abroad. Her jubilee on the fiftieth anniversary of her accession was celebrated throughout the world. Indeed, it was a period of national greatness that ended with her death on January 22, 1901. In the funeral procession were an unprecedented number of European royalty, many of them her descendants.

## ✓ BENJAMIN DISRAELI

Benjamin Disraeli, the Earl of Beaconsfield, British statesman and author who became prime minister of England, never attended a public school or a university. Descended from a celebrated Jewish family named Disraeli, he was born in London on December 21, 1804. Apprenticed for a brief time to a firm of attorneys, his father's influence gained him an easy entrance into society, and before he was twenty he was a well known man about town. His first novel, *Vivian Grey*, appeared in 1826. His other important works were *Coningsby*, *Sybil*, *Lothair* and *Endymion*.

Disraeli traveled extensively and used the experiences he gained as the basis for some of his books. After several unsuccessful attempts, he was elected to the House of Commons in 1837, the year that Queen Victoria ascended the throne. He was appointed chancellor of the exchequer in 1852 and held the post ten months. Six years later he was named to the same position under Lord Derby. He attained his ambition in 1868 when he became prime minister on the resignation of Lord Derby. He served less than a year, but was again named prime minister in 1874 and elevated to the peerage two years later as Earl of Beaconsfield. The queen was deeply attached to him. He resigned in 1880 and died on April 19, 1881.

## ✓ WILLIAM EWART GLADSTONE

The English statesman William Ewart Gladstone, the greatest orator of his age, dominated the English parliament for the better part of sixty years. He made the chancellorship of the exchequer one of the outstanding offices of state. As a practical economist and a conscientious and moral leader, he introduced reforms which marked his period as one of the most notable in English history. He believed that local autonomy was the only solution for the imperial problem and he tried to obtain home rule for Ireland. Throughout his career he fought against increasing armaments.

Gladstone was born at Liverpool on December 29 1809. He attended Eton and Oxford and would have become a preacher, but his father persuaded him to take up politics. He entered Parliament in 1833. Between 1868 and 1894 he was Prime Minister four times. Outside of Parliament he was a book lover, student and writer. His most famous book was *The State and Its Relations with the Church*, a plea for political supremacy and spiritual independence of the Church. He completed a translation of the Odes of Horace on the day of his retirement in 1894. He died in May, 1898, and was buried in Westminster Abbey.

## ALFRED TENNYSON

In 1850 Alfred, Lord Tennyson, was appointed England's poet laureate to succeed William Wordsworth. Tennyson's literary career began with such creations as "an epic of 6,000 lines" at the age of twelve and a drama in blank verse at fourteen. Tennyson, born on August 6, 1809, was fortunate in his environment. There was a fine library in his home, and his parents were cultured people. He was prepared for college largely by his father, who would not allow him to leave home until he had recited from memory all the Odes of Horace. He entered Trinity College, Cambridge in 1828. There he made a host of friendships which were ended only by death. Among his friends were William Thackeray, William Gladstone, Thomas Carlyle and, most important of all, Arthur Henry Hallam. Upon Hallam's untimely death Tennyson immortalized this cherished companion with the huge *Break, Break, Break*, and with the elegy *In Memoriam*, the most beloved elegiac poem in English literature and surpassed only by Milton's *Lycides*. Tennyson was handsome. Carlyle described him as "one of the finest-looking men in the world." But his health was not robust, and he was extremely nervous. Throughout his life he interspersed periods of solitude and almost monastic seclusion with frequent and extensive travel. In 1850 he married Sarah Sellwood. Twice Tennyson refused



Italy, where he was to spend the happiest years of his life. For in 1846 this most masculine and vigorous of poets married the frail Elizabeth Barrett, of Wimpole Street in London, and carried her off to Italy. Both the Brownings were devoted to that country and took a personal interest in its liberation and unification.

Although during his married life Browning's literary production was not large, at the time of his wife's death many of his best loved poems were complete. Among them were *Home Thoughts from Abroad*, *Memorabilia*, *One Word More*, *Fra Filippo Lippi*, *Andrea del Sarto*, "*De Gustibus*—", *Two in the Campagna*, and *My Last Duchess*. He again took up residence in England and achieved a position as a leading English poet. In 1867 he won an honorary degree from the University of Oxford and became an honorary fellow of Balliol College. The next year appeared his *magnum opus*, *The Ring and the Book*. During his last years Browning was famous and led a semi-public life. He died at his son's home in Venice on December 12, 1889, and was buried in the Poets' Corner of Westminster Abbey on December 31.

## ELIZABETH BARRETT BROWNING

When the English poetess Elizabeth Barrett Browning was fifteen she suffered a spinal injury while attempting to saddle her pony. This, together with a pulmonary ailment, and the shock of her favorite brother's drowning, made her a semi-invalid for life. Books became her world. In 1838 the Barrett family took up residence at Wimpole Street in London. Miss Barrett published two volumes of poetry in 1844. The poet Robert Browning was attracted by them and was eventually introduced to their author. Their love story is one of the most beautiful in all literary history. Knowing that it would be useless to ask her father's consent the couple married secretly. Taking her dog Flush and a faithful maid with them the Brownings eloped to Italy. Their only child, Robert Wiedeman



*Lucrezia Borgia* and *Ruy Blas*, firmly established his literary reputation. By 1841, when he was elected to the French Academy, he was at the height of his fame. However, two years later a new play failed miserably, the same year one of his daughters was drowned in the Seine. He temporarily abandoned poetry for politics, and in 1845 was created a peer of France.

In politics Hugo was courageous but not sensible, after the destruction of the French Republic in 1851 he was in exile. He did not return to France until 1870 brought about the overthrow of the Second Empire that he hated. During this period abroad he continued to write. Among his productions was his most famous novel *Les Misérables*, written on the English Channel island of Guernsey. The last years of his exile were saddened by his wife's desertion and subsequent death and a daughter's elopement with an English officer. After his return to Paris, he took part in politics for only a short time. He was universally famous, and on his eightieth birthday he was acclaimed by 600,000 fellow citizens. Hugo died on May 22, 1885, and on May 31 was buried in the Panthéon. His last wish—that he be placed in a pauper's coffin—was carried out. For a night he lay in state under the Arc de Triomphe.

## HONORÉ DE BALZAC

The typically French novelist Honoré de Balzac was born on May 20, 1799. His father chose law as his son's profession, but Honoré finally obtained permission to prove himself as a writer, an attempt that was successful in spite of discouragement over his early deficiencies. The book that established his reputation, *La Peau de Chagrin*, appeared in 1831. Between that time and 1842 he wrote seventy-nine novels. Those collected under the title *The Human Comedy* are his masterpieces, revealing his mocking analysis of humanity. Balzac constantly revised his books, even rewriting them on the printer's proof sheets. For a number of years he worked from twelve to twenty hours a day,



the most universally read storytellers in the world. Critics describe his genius as being more creative than artistic. His fertile brain supplied enough original material to keep several lesser writers busy in his "novel factory," and he is reputed to have unscrupulously plagiarized ideas or looted them from others.

Dumas, who was born in July 21, 1802, at Villers-Cotterets, France, was the grandson of a San Domingo Negress. He started to seek fame and fortune as a writer. His drama *Henry III* was praised by other Romantic writers, won him the admiration of Victor Hugo, and brought him 30,000 francs. His first historical novel was followed by the *Chroniques de France*, a series of almost 100 volumes in which he wrote the history of France as a human comedy. For twenty years he wandered around the world in search of material for books. *The Black Tulip* is one of his shorter novels. He squandered his income until he was poverty-stricken in his last years. His son, Alexandre Dumas, fils, whom he had neglected and who wrote *La Dame aux Camélias*, cared for him until his death on December 5, 1870.

## GEORGE ELIOT

George Eliot was the pseudonym of Mary Ann (or Marian) Evans, distinguished English novelist. Born on a farm in Warwickshire on November 22, 1819, she received the routine education given to girls of her time until she was seventeen when, upon her mother's death, she became her father's housekeeper. Her duties in this capacity were accompanied by the study of music of which she was very fond, and of German, Greek and Latin, omnivorous reading directed by her own good taste, also occupied her. She played the piano well and might have performed successfully in public had it not been for her acute shyness. Throughout her youth Marian was deeply religious, but with expanding intellect and the family's removal to Coventry came loss of faith. The immediate result was a

near-break with her father, who was a religious man of the old school; the ultimate influence was reflected in the insight with which she approached evangelical beliefs in her novels

After her father's death Marian Evans went abroad for a while and then to live in London, where she did editorial work on the *Westminster Review* and became acquainted with many literary personalities. Among them was George Henry Lewes. Lewes was separated from his wife under conditions that made a divorce impossible. Miss Evans entered into a relationship with him which she looked upon as marriage and which was on the whole a happy union. Lewes encouraged her in her creative writing, the first fruits of which were three stories published in 1858 under the pen name of George Eliot. Charles Dickens discerned that the writer was a woman and wrote her that the stories had "exquisite truth and delicacy." *Adam Bede*, the most popular of her novels, appeared the next year and took the public by storm. This was followed by *The Mill on the Floss* and *Silas Marner*. *Romola*, a novel of the Italian Renaissance for which the author did a prodigious amount of research, brought her the then unheard-of sum of £7,000. Her other novels included *Middlemarch* and *Daniel Deronda*. Of her poetry little is now remembered except the lines entitled *O May I Join the Choir Invisible*. She was always interested in the education of women.

The death of Lewes in 1878 was a severe blow from which the novelist never fully recovered. Among her comforters was an old friend, J. W. Cross, an American, whom she married in May of 1880. But their marriage was brief, she died on December 22 of the same year.

## WALT WHITMAN

Walt Whitman, the "Good Gray Poet," was born on May 31, 1819, on a farm near Huntington, Long Island. His family moved to Brooklyn when he was a child. His formal education was completed by the time he was twelve. His father was a

carpenter, and Walt himself alternated that trade with teaching school, setting type or writing for the newspapers. His approach to a literary career was via journalism rather than a college education. In 1848 Whitman made a trip to New Orleans. For a short time he worked on a newspaper there and profited immensely by the travel.

The first edition of *Leaves of Grass* appeared in 1855. On the cover of this little volume of verse, grass roots ran down from the gold letters of the title. At first there were no buyers, and Whitman himself sent copies to various writers. The reception it received varied from John Greenleaf Whittier's throwing it into the fire, to Ralph W. Emerson's writing of it "I find it the most extraordinary piece of wit and wisdom that America has yet contributed." There was a second edition the next year and a third in 1860. The book sold fairly well until the Civil War.

Whitman, the poet of democracy, was strongly influenced by the Civil War. His *Drum-Taps*, which appeared in 1865, is perhaps the best single volume of poems stemming from the conflict. During the closing years of the war Whitman was in Washington, ministering to both Union and Confederate soldiers in the city's hospitals. In 1865 he was dismissed from a minor post in the Department of the Interior, but after the intercession of friends he received another place in the Attorney General's office. Following two more editions of *Leaves of Grass*, Whitman published in 1871 an important prose work, *Democratic Vistas*. By this time, although the majority of Americans looked upon him as a radical poet, he had a few serious admirers in the United States and a number of followers among European critics and scholars.

In 1873 Whitman became partially paralyzed. He passed the last years of his life in Camden, New Jersey, so poverty-stricken that he was reduced to selling his books from a basket on the streets of Camden and Philadelphia, but he bore his ill health, poverty and lack of appreciation with cheerfulness and courage. *Complete Prose* was published in 1892, the year of his death. He was buried in Harleigh Cemetery at Camden.

## HECTOR BERLIOZ

Hector Berlioz, French composer, was born on December 11, 1803, at La Côte Saint-André, near Grenoble. He died in Paris on March 8, 1869. The son of a doctor, Hector was supposed to become a doctor too, but the dissecting room proved too much for him. He began to study music, struggled against poverty, and finally turned to hack-work as a critic, in which he spoke of Handel as "a barrel of pork and beer," neglected Schubert and Chopin, but praised Beethoven. He hated this work. In 1830 he won a fellowship that sent him to Italy. When he returned he saw through a mist of tears the home of a girl he had loved as a child. He still loved her, he heard she was married. Then he fell in love with an Irish actress, Henrietta Smithson, who inspired his *Symphonie Fantastique*. He threatened to poison himself, she did not even come to hear his symphony. He finally won and married her, but after seven unhappy years they separated.

For another love, a Russian chorus girl, he wrote his *Romeo et Juliette*. Among his operas were *Benvenuto Cellini*, and—best known—*The Damnation of Faust*. Berlioz was a master of orchestration, and an original, romantic composer.

## FRANZ LISZT

When the Hungarian composer and pianist Franz Liszt was only nine, his talent was so marked that several noblemen undertook to pay for his musical education. Accompanied by his father he traveled and studied throughout Europe, torn between his music and a desire to become a priest. In 1831 he heard the Italian violin virtuoso Nicolò Paganini. This had a decided influence on the brilliance of his own compositions. These are divided into three groups: (1) piano pieces; (2) orchestral music, and (3) songs and choruses.

Liszt made several triumphal concert tours through Europe. He was made Kapellmeister to the Grand Elector of Weimar,

knighted by Frederick William IV and decorated by every European court. In 1865 he took minor church orders and became known as Abbé Liszt. After he became president of the Budapest Royal Musical Academy, he lived alternately there, at Rome and Vienna. He was born at Raiding on October 22, 1811, and died on July 31, 1886, at Bayreuth, one of the greatest champions of Richard Wagner's new music. Liszt's *Faust Symphony* was dedicated to Hector Berlioz. *Les Préludes* is a popular symphonic poem. The fifteen *Hungarian Rhapsodies* were written for the piano. His songs were mostly sacred music.

## RICHARD WAGNER

Wilhelm Richard Wagner, German composer, was born in Leipzig, May 22, 1813. As a boy he was fond of the theater. At the age of fourteen he wrote a drama inspired by *Hamlet* and *King Lear* in which so many of the characters died in the first four acts that their ghosts had to finish the play. Wagner tried at first to teach himself music, but when this proved impossible, he studied under others. His first production as a composer was an overture played in Leipzig in 1830. Three years later, when he was twenty, he became a professional musician in the position of chorus master at Würzburg. In 1836 Wagner married an actress, Minna Planer. The marriage was not fortunate. Minna was delighted with the success of *Rienzi*, produced in Dresden in 1842, but when *The Flying Dutchman*, produced the next year, failed to receive the favor accorded *Rienzi*, she did not see why Wagner instead of returning to the style of *Rienzi*, continued true to his art and wrote *Tannhäuser*, which was even less understood than *The Flying Dutchman*. Wagner finished *Lehergraben* in 1848, but he did not hear it performed until thirteen years later. However, its production under the direction of Franz Liszt in 1850 was a tremendous encouragement to Wagner, then in exile because of his part in the revolution of 1848. During this period Wagner suffered great poverty.

Minna uncomplainingly shared it with him because she believed in his future popular success. Encouraged by Liszt and the production of *Lohengrin*, Wagner began work on the *Nibelungen Ring*, a tetralogy of operas beginning with *Das Rheingold*, followed by *Die Walküre* and *Siegfried* and ending with *Götterdämmerung*. These operas were composed in the reverse order, as Wagner felt upon the completion of each that the story needed still further exposition. Wagner made the acquaintance of Mathilde Wesendonck and her husband in 1852. The friendship between Mathilde and Wagner deepened into love, which was never consummated. This passion led to the composition of *Tristan und Isolde*, containing what many believe the most beautiful love music ever written. In Vienna after fifty-four rehearsals it was pronounced impossible, it was not produced until 1865. The Paris production of *Tannhäuser* in 1861 was the occasion for a scandalous riot fomented by a political clique, with the result that Wagner became a hero in Germany, and the ban of exile was lifted. His wife died in 1866. *Die Meistersinger von Nürnberg* was produced in 1868. Two years later Wagner married Cosima, the wife of a friend, and a daughter of Franz Liszt. Wagner's next and last opera was *Parsifal*. The composer died of a heart attack on February 13, 1883, at Venice, Italy. The question of his greatness is still disputed and no one is lukewarm about it.

## GIUSEPPE VERDI

All his life Giuseppe Fortunino Francesco Verdi, Italian composer, kept the broken-down spinet that his father bought for him when he was a boy. Verdi wrote his first symphony at the age of fifteen. Four years later he took up the study of music under private teachers in Milan. When he applied for a scholarship, he was rejected by the Milan Conservatory "for want of musical ability." His first opera was produced in that city in 1839. His next work, a comic opera, was composed under difficult circumstances (he had just lost his wife and

two children), and was a failure. Verdi was so discouraged that he determined to give up writing for the stage, but a year later he wrote *Nabucodonosor*, which gained him a place in the front ranks of contemporary Italian composers. With *Ernani* he became Europe's most popular composer. This opera, the libretto of which was taken from Victor Hugo's play, was the embodiment of romantic liberalism, causing patriotic demonstrations in the theater.

The culminating point in the next period was reached with *Rigoletto*, *Il Trovatore* and *La Traviata*. *La Forza del Destino* and *Don Carlos* are classed as transitional works between his second and third period. The latter span began with *Aida*, written at the request of the Khedive of Egypt, and first produced in December, 1871, in Cairo. In this opera Verdi, trying to write in the style of Richard Wagner, broke away from the conventions of operatic music and developed a new, freer method of expression. With his *Requiem Mass* he applied this technique to sacred music. In the operatic field *Aida* was followed by a new version of *Simon Boccanegra*, which had previously failed, and by *Otello*, and *Falstaff*. It is interesting that *Falstaff*, Verdi's final work for the stage, written when he was eighty years old, is ranked as one of the world's most engaging comic operas. *Otello* was a failure at the time of its first presentations, although it is regarded today as one of the composer's masterpieces. In all Verdi composed over twenty operas.

Verdi was aided greatly by his wife, a famous prima donna whom he married in 1849 after she had made several appearances in his operas. He was born on October 10, 1813, at Roncole in Parma, and he died in Milan on January 27, 1901.

## JOHANNES BRAHMS

The German composer Johannes Brahms was the last of the great classic masters of music. Brahms was a native of Hamburg, where he was born on May 7, 1833. His first musical

instruction was from his father, and he soon attained prominence as a pianist. A turning point in his career occurred in 1853 during a concert tour as the accompanist of a noted violinist. One piano, on which he was to play a Beethoven sonata, was a half tone below the true pitch. Brahms played the part by heart, transposing it from A to B-flat. This feat so impressed the violinist Joseph Joachim in the audience, that he introduced himself and gave Brahms letters of recommendation to some of the leading musicians of the day, including Franz Liszt and Robert Schumann. The latter, to whom Brahms promptly took some of his compositions, recognized his genius from the few pieces that Brahms had then composed. In an article entitled *New Pathways* Schumann predicted that Brahms would be great.

After he had thus received recognition, Brahms continued studying and making concert tours in addition to composing. From 1862 until his death Vienna was his home, although he visited Italy, Germany and Switzerland. Because of his fear of the sea he refused to go to England to accept the honorary degree of Doctor of Music that Cambridge University wished to confer upon him, the University of Breslau made him a Doctor of Philosophy. In 1889 he received the freedom of the city of Vienna, where he died in 1897.

Brahms won a place in the heart of the German nation in 1868 with his *German Requiem*, commemorative of the German soldiers who died in the war with Austria. Some of his best loved scores are his Hungarian dances, his beautiful songs, his concertos for piano and violin, and his orchestral compositions, which include four symphonies, monumental in their poetic nobility. He never attempted opera. When he did go to opera, he usually left before the performance was completed, professing distaste for the combination of music and drama. He never accepted Richard Wagner as a great composer although he was not entirely uninfluenced by him. When the wife of his friend Johann Strauss, the waltz king, asked for an autograph, Brahms wrote the first measures of *The Blue Danube* and signed them. 'unfortunately not by me—J. Brahms.' He was very fond of Robert Schumann's widow, but never married.

At the close of his first year in the Paris Conservatory, which he entered when he was eighteen, Charles François Gounod won the second Prix de Rome with his cantata *Marie Stuart et Rizzio*, based on the love story of Mary, Queen of Scots. In 1839 he won the Grand Prix de Rome with the cantata *Fernand*. Gounod, composer of sacred and dramatic music, was born in Paris on June 17, 1818. After his successes at the Conservatory, he next attracted attention in 1851 with his *Messe Solennelle* and in the same year made his debut as an operatic composer with *Sappho*. He became superintendent of singing instruction for the communal schools in Paris and director of the choral society connected with them. During the Franco-German war he organized a choir in England. He died in 1893.

The opera *Faust*, for which Gounod is most famous, was produced on March 19, 1859. It was not immediately popular. French critics regard his opera *Roméo et Juliette* as of greater musical value. His oratorios include *Redemption* and *Mors et Vita*. *St. Cecilia* is his best known mass.

## GEORGES BIZET

The opera *Carmen*, now regarded as the masterpiece of Georges Bizet, was the final attempt of its discouraged author to win the acclaim of a public which had failed to receive his previous works with much appreciation. *Carmen*, first produced on March 3, 1875, was also a failure at the time of its appearance, but in spite of that Bizet believed he had written a good opera. His faith has been vindicated, for it is now one of the world's most popular operas.

Bizet was born near Paris on October 25, 1838, and entered the Paris Conservatory at the age of nine. There he carried off all the honors for nearly ten years. In 1857 he won the Grand Prix de Rome for a cantata *Gloria et Clotilde*. His first opera was *Les Pêcheurs de perles* and his next *La jolie Fille de Perle*.

His incidental music to Alphonse Daudet's *L'Arlésienne* had a better reception than most of his works. In addition to his operas Bizet was a pianist of note and a remarkable reader of orchestral scores. On June 3, 1875, three months after the production of *Carmen*, Bizet died in Paris of heart disease.

## GIUSEPPE GARIBALDI

Giuseppe Garibaldi was an Italian patriot who had an outstanding part in freeing Italy from foreign rule and uniting her under one government. Garibaldi, born on July 4, 1807, began his training early in the technique of revolutionary war, at which he became a master. Upon being condemned to death in 1834 for conspiracy against Giuseppe Mazzini, another Italian leader, he escaped to South America. There he fought in a revolt against the Brazilian government, aided Uruguay in securing her freedom and married a Spanish wife, who shared in his campaigns.

Garibaldi returned to Italy in 1848 to fight the Austrians and then to defend Rome against the French. His wife died during his retreat from the Austrians. He made his way to the United States, but went back to Italy again in 1854 and resumed the war for her freedom. When Rome finally became the capital of a united Italy, Garibaldi took a seat in Parliament in January of 1875. His second marriage, to a countess, was an unhappy one and was annulled when he married a peasant girl in 1879. He lived quietly on the island of Caprera until his death on June 2, 1882.

## "KARL MARX

In his book *Das Kapital* (Capital), the first volume of which was published in 1867, Karl Marx sought to discover the economic laws that govern society. His theory, known as "The Economic Interpretation of History," resulted from his tracing

the course of historical development in terms of economic activity. Seeking to bring about the organization of all laborers for their common good, he founded the modern Socialist movement. Marx was born at Treves, Germany, on May 5, 1818, and received his education at the universities of Bonn and Berlin. His father, a German-Jewish lawyer who had become a Christian, was deeply interested in philosophy and history, and encouraged Marx to prepare for a career as a university teacher. However, Marx soon found that his radical views made him unacceptable in the educational world in the Germany of his day. For a time he took up journalism, but his radical views were so strenuously opposed by the government that he left the country, going to Paris in 1843.

In Paris Marx made the acquaintance of another German socialist, Friedrich Engels, with whom he was to be associated for the rest of his life. In 1848 he and Engels issued a pamphlet, known as the *Communist Manifesto*. This became the creed and program of socialist revolutionaries.

The liberal revolution in 1848 made it possible for Marx to return to Germany for a short time, but with the revival of reactionary political conditions he exiled himself again. He went to London in 1849, and remained there to the end of his life. It was during these later years that he did much of his writing. He died in London on March 14, 1883.

Nicolas Lenin made the teachings of Karl Marx the basis for the economic and political revolution in Russia in 1917, which led to the establishment of the Union of Soviet Socialist Republics.

## FRIEDRICH NIETZSCHE

Friedrich Wilhelm Nietzsche, the most influential German philosopher after Immanuel Kant, was born October 15, 1844, at Roken, a Saxon village. His education included study at Bonn and Leipzig universities. He fled from Leipzig when cholera broke out, and after a period in the Prussian army, accepted a professorship of classical philology at Basel. The

Franco-Prussian War interrupted his work. Serving in the hospital corps, he contracted diphtheria, which so undermined his health that he eventually was forced to resign his position at the university. He had already written a book called *Human, All Too Human*.

During the next eight years he wrote his most important books, *Thus Spake Zarathustra*, *Beyond Good and Evil* and *The Genealogy of Morals*, and notes on his final book *The Will to Power*. All of his literary work was marked by significant rhythmic style. In 1888, he suffered a stroke. It was not until August 25, 1900, that his body followed his mind in death at Weimar. Nietzsche denied the greatness of Richard Wagner's music, although the two men were intimate friends for a time. His concept of the "Superman" has been much discussed.

## WILLIAM JAMES

William James, American psychologist, was the son of Henry James, a Swedenborgian theologian, and the brother of Henry James, the famous novelist. William made a number of important contributions to psychology. One of the best known is his statement that there is a "moral equivalent for war," that man's instinct to fight could be used in battling such enemies as fire, flood, famine, disease, etc., instead of in wars. In his essay *The Energies of Men*, Professor James showed that all men have powers that they only half use. Other of his contributions are the general theory of emotion as organic sensation and the discovery that there are two kinds of human beings—the tough-minded and the tender-minded.

James also wrote on the psychological aspects of religion. His chief books were *Principles of Psychology*, *Talks to Teachers on Psychology*, *The Varieties of Religious Experience*, *The Will to Believe*, *Pragmatism*, and *Some Problems of Philosophy*. He was born in New York on January 11, 1842, educated at Harvard, and appointed a professor of philosophy and psychology there. He died on August 27, 1910, in Boston.

## GUY DE MAUPASSANT

Henri René Albert Guy de Maupassant, French novelist, is ranked as one of the greatest short-story writers of the nineteenth century, but while his stories are models of literary perfection, they do not form pleasant reading because they are characterized by pessimism and, in his later works, by traces of an unbalanced mind. In less than twelve years De Maupassant published ten collections of short stories. His thirteen tales published in English under the title *The Odd Number* are considered among his best. They include *The Necklace* and *The Piece of String*.

De Maupassant, born on August 5, 1850, began his career as a naval clerk and also served in the French army. When he took up writing he made his godfather, the novelist Gustave Flaubert, his model in composition. He practiced several years, destroying many manuscripts before he would allow one of his stories to be published. The first appeared in 1880, and in the same year he published a book of verse and a drama. Of his novels, *Pierre and Jean* and *A Life* rank with his short stories. In 1890 a mental illness caused him to give up writing, and two years later he became completely insane. He died in an asylum on July 6, 1893.

## FEODOR DOSTOIEVSKY

The Russian novelist Feodor Mikhailovich Dostoevsky was sentenced to death for his connection with a revolutionary plot. On the scaffold the sentence was changed to hard labor in Siberia. After he was pardoned five years later, he wrote the books which made him famous. Dostoevsky, born on November 11, 1821, was the son of a Moscow physician in whose home extreme formality and rigid discipline were maintained. In 1844 Dostoevsky gave up engineering, in which he had been graduated from the School of Engineering in Saint Petersburg, to become a writer. His work was interrupted by his prison

term, but after that it continued until his death on February 8, 1881

Dostoevsky's first long novel was *The Downtrodden and Oppressed Memoirs from a Dead House* related his experiences in Siberia *Crime and Punishment*, probably his most famous book, marked his final break with the liberal and radical groups Among his other works were *The Possessed*, *The Brothers Karamozov*, and *The Idiot*. His powerful psychological analysis of pathological characters, which criminologists say is scientifically accurate, gained for him a unique place in literature.

## LYOV TOLSTOY

Count Lyov Nikolayevich Tolstoy, author of *War and Peace* and *Anna Karenina* and founder of the creed known as Tolstoyism, was one of the most revered men in the world during the last decade of his life He was born on August 28, 1828, in the Russian province of Tula His young manhood was occupied with obtaining an education, farming, living an idle society life, serving in the army, and traveling in Europe But as early as 1847 he had begun a diary His literary life grew out of this and it was the source for some of his short stories, the first of which, *Childhood*, was published in 1852

Tolstoy was on the verge of an inner revolution in 1862 until he married a girl sixteen years his junior They took up residence on his estate at Yasnaya Polyana and his prosperous and happy marriage allayed his unrest He developed a philosophy of not trying to be wiser than life and nature, which theme he embodied in his long novel *War and Peace*, completed in 1866, and translated into French, German, and English His other masterpiece, *Anna Karenina*, was begun in 1873 and appeared in installments from 1875 to 1877 During the writing of this book his inner conflict returned He began to feel uneasy about his prosperous mode of living, about approaching death, and about some religious justification of his life. The despair to which he finally succumbed was followed

by a formulation of the doctrine of nonresistance which is the basis for the creed bearing his name. He gives a complete account of his conversion in his book *A Confession*. The influence of Tolstoy's doctrines was perhaps greater in other countries than it was in Russia. Russian authorities were hostile at first to his activity and exiled many of his followers to Siberia.

*What Is Art?* written in 1896, shows a change in Tolstoy's attitude toward literature. All of his later work embodied the idea of ethical Christianity. His novel *Resurrection* was finished in 1900. Tolstoy adopted a simple mode of life and made over all his property to his wife. Eventually he became estranged from his family. He left home on October 28, 1910, and died on November 8 of the same year. He was interred at Yasnaya without a Christian burial.

## HENRIK IBSEN

There are few points of interest in the life of Henrik Johan Ibsen, Norwegian poet and dramatist, other than the production of his plays, for Ibsen was a man devoted to his work to the exclusion of practically all other activities and of nearly all people, even his family. Ibsen was characterized as a poet and a mystic, who had little need for contact with society. After he left his home in 1850 he communicated with no members of his family except his sister and his few friends apparently had little real influence with him. He married in 1858, however, and devoted time and care to the education of his son Sigurd.

Ibsen was born on March 20, 1828, and at the age of fifteen was apprenticed to an apothecary. This work was distasteful to him, and he assuaged his unhappiness by writing poetry and reading extensively, especially poetry and theology. In 1849 he went to Christiania to school. There his first play, *Catharine*, was produced. The next year he was appointed member of the National Theater at Bergen. In 1857 he returned to Christiania as manager of a new theater which post he held until the theater failed. In 1861 he embarked on a tour of

Italy and for many years thereafter he passed the majority of his time in foreign countries. During his last fifteen years he resided in Christiania. Ibsen's mind weakened during the latter part of this period. Four years before his death on May 28, 1906, he suffered an almost complete physical and mental collapse.

Among Ibsen's early plays were *Love's Comedy* and *The Pretenders*. His first important plays were *Brand* and *Peer Gynt*. After the success of *Brand*, a poet's pension was granted to Ibsen. *The League of Youth* in 1869 was Ibsen's first modern social drama. It was followed by a double play *Emperor and Galilean*, a historical tragedy. *Pillars of Society* in 1877 again took up the social drama series, which was continued with *A Doll's House*, *Ghosts*, *An Enemy of the People*, *The Wild Duck*, *Rosmersholm*, *The Lady from the Sea*, *Hedda Gabler*, *The Master Builder*, and *When We Dead Awaken*. These plays are an indictment of the evils of society. Ibsen celebrated the importance of the individual and the belief that the worst sin is a denial of love. At first his plays were received with venomous hostility, but before his death he was acclaimed throughout Europe.

## PETER ILICH TCHAIKOVSKY

Peter Ilich Tchaikovsky's change from law and a clerkship in the Ministry of Justice to a full-time job of studying, teaching and composing music was a big step, but he took it in his twenty-third year launching himself upon one of the most successful careers in musical history. Within ten years he was established one of the first Russian composers to obtain a following abroad.

Tchaikovsky's father was a mining engineer in the village of Votkinsk where his son was born on May 7, 1840. The composer entered the Conservatory at Moscow where his progress was so rapid that in 1866 he was appointed a teacher. The next year he made his debut as a conductor.

Tchaikovsky was twenty-eight when he fell in love with the famous French singer Désirée Artot, who dashed his happiness to bits by marrying someone else. It is believed by some that the *Romeo and Juliet* music was influenced by this unhappy experience. Tchaikovsky's own rash marriage in 1877, a critical year for him, was a tragic mistake because of his abnormal temperament. A strange friendship between Madame von Meck, the widow of a wealthy engineer, and Tchaikovsky had begun in 1876. The unique feature of their relationship was that they never met, although they exchanged detailed and eloquent letters. She first gave him commissions for his work, then increased this to a yearly allowance, but later she discontinued her financial aid, hurting the musician deeply.

The now-popular *B-flat minor Piano Concerto*, so severely criticized by some of his friends at the time of its composition in 1875, was followed by the *Swan Lake* music, *Francesca da Rimini*, and the *Fourth Symphony*, composed in Switzerland in 1877, during the crisis in his life, and dedicated to Madame von Meck. The same year he made the first of several European tours. Tchaikovsky wrote the "1812" *Overture* in 1880 and then the *Fifth Symphony*. In 1891 he visited America. He conducted the first performance of his *Sixth Symphony*, the "*Pathétique*," at St. Petersburg in 1893. It was received without enthusiasm at first, but was destined to become one of the world's most popular symphonies. Nine days after its performance he died, on November 6, 1893.

## MODEST MOUSSORGSKY

Modest Petrovich Moussorgsky, Russian composer, is best known for his colorful opera *Boris Godunov*. He was born in March, 1839, at Karevo, and died in March 1881, at St. Petersburg, now Leningrad. At 17 he entered the army. A musical comrade introduced him to a composer through whom he met others with whom he studied.

In 1874 *Boris Godunov* was performed for the first time at

the Imperial Russian Opera House Its blazing vitality made it a great success Another historical opera *Khovanstchina* was largely completed the following year. Though Moussorgsky worked at it for the rest of his life, his colleague Rimsky-Korsakov filled it out in 1881, and it was only performed after Moussorgsky's death It dealt with a plot against the young czar Peter the Great Moussorgsky also wrote piano pieces of which one suite called *Pictures at an Exhibition* was later orchestrated Moussorgsky foresaw modern developments in art as when he wrote "A building is fine when, in addition to having a beautiful façade, it is well planned and solid, when one can feel the purpose of the building"

## NIKOLAI RIMSKY-KORSAKOV

The Russian composer Nikolai Andreevich Rimsky-Korsakov, born March 18, 1844, at Tikhvin, was graduated from the Naval Academy of Saint Petersburg in 1862, served as a midshipman in the Russian navy and made a cruise around the world By 1865 he had written his first symphony, which was conducted by another composer Mili Alexeyevich Balakireff When Balakireff became interested in his work, Rimsky-Korsakov decided to retire from active service in the navy and become a professor at the Saint Petersburg Conservatory, which position he held until his death, June 21, 1908 From 1886 to 1890 he was conductor of the Russian Symphony Concerts in Saint Petersburg The *Capriccio Espagnol*, composed in 1887, had its first performance at one of these concerts which he conducted

Rimsky-Korsakov associated with a group of composers who formed the Young Russian school devoted to the cause of national music He often employed Russian folk-song themes in his compositions which included symphonies, operas, several orchestral suites, overtures, songs, and pianoforte pieces He was also a brilliant instrumentalist *Scheherazade*, *The Russian Easter*, *Snyegourochka* are some of his most popular works

## EDVARD GRIEG

Edvard Grieg, Norwegian composer, was born June 15, 1843 at Bergen. His mother was his first music teacher. He was sent to Leipzig, Germany for further studies and to Copenhagen, Denmark. Meeting a young compatriot, Grieg learned to know Scandinavian folk tunes. "It was," Grieg said, "as though scales had fallen from my eyes." The two young men swore that their music would no longer be influenced by German composers, and enthusiastically resolved to tread a new path, founding a Nordic school.

Grieg became friendly with Franz Liszt, Hungarian composer, during a trip to Italy and also visited Germany again. His *Piano Concerto in A Minor*, one of his most popular works, he himself performed at Leipzig in 1879. Thereafter he lived in Bergen, directing the concerts of the Harmonic Society and composing music that some found poetic, others superficial. After a number of visits to England late in life, Grieg died in his native city, September 4, 1907. He composed three violin sonatas, music for *Peer Gynt* (the play by his fellow countryman Henrik Ibsen) and a number of songs including the familiar and moving *Ich Liebe Dich*.

## ANTONÍN DVOŘÁK

Antonín Dvořák, Czech composer, was born September 8, 1841, at Nelahozeves, Bohemia. His father was a butcher. In 1857 Dvořák went to Prague. Here he wrote symphonies and songs. Of the number of operas which Dvořák wrote, none has attained popularity. (The favorite Czech opera *The Bartered Bride* is by Friedrich Smetana, contemporary with Dvořák, and also known for his symphonic poem *Ilta, the Moldau*.) To earn a living Dvořák played the violin at the Prague National Theatre. His first recognition as a composer came with a national hymn in 1873 and that same year, having proved that he could support a wife, he married a pupil whom he had long loved. His wife's practical common sense

was a great help to him. He was now successful enough to give up his position at the theater.

Among his compositions for voice are *Stabat Mater*, a choral work written as a solace for his grief when his second daughter died, and, for single voice, *Songs My Mother Taught Me*. In 1892 Dvořák visited the United States. Indian and Negro themes inspired him to write his *Symphony from the New World* the following year. The celebrated *Humoresque* for violin was also written in America. Dvořák died in Prague on May 1, 1904.

## JOHANN STRAUSS

In 1844 Johann Strauss, popular Austrian composer, organized his own orchestra and conducted his first concert. Its brilliant success put him on an equal basis with his father who, until that time, had been the most noted dance orchestra conductor in old Vienna. When the elder Strauss died in 1849, Johann united the two orchestras.

Johann Strauss was born in 1825. Piano lessons were his reward for good marks in school, but when his father first heard him play the violin, he was so jealous of his son's ability that he took the instrument away. Johann's mother bought him another one and the boy practiced in other people's homes. For bursting into song during a class he was dismissed from business school and instead of learning to compose sacred music, he played waltzes on the church organ. Johann was nineteen when his father and mother were divorced and it became necessary for him to earn some money, so he launched himself on a career as a conductor and composer. In less than ten years he became the toast of Vienna and was equally applauded in all the foreign countries he toured. For ten years he was a tremendously popular conductor of summer concerts at St. Petersburg, Russia.

Strauss was married in August of 1862 to Henrietta Treffz, who belonged to a wealthy, socially prominent family. In 1864 he was appointed Director of Dance Music to the

Court of Vienna, and in 1867 during the Universal Exposition in Paris he conquered that city and the world with the most famous and loved of all his waltzes, *The Blue Danube*, the chief crowned heads of Europe dancing to its strains. Strauss next turned to the composition of operettas, the first of which was *Indigo* in 1871. The following year he made a visit to America where he was grandly received. Among Strauss's many friends was the composer Johannes Brahms. The Hungarian pianist Franz Liszt was the first to recognize the possibilities of the Strauss waltzes as piano pieces.

During the last twenty years of his life Strauss was almost overwhelmed by the quantity and splendor of celebrations given in his honor. He died on June 3, 1899.

Strauss composed nearly 500 dance pieces, including such well known waltzes as *Tales from the Vienna Woods*, *Artists' Life*, *Wine, Women, and Song*, the *Emperor Waltz*, and *Voices of Spring*. Among his other operettas are *The Carnival in Rome*, *Die Fledermaus* (literally, *The Bat*), and *The Gypsy Baron*.

## GREGOR MENDEL

Gregor Johann Mendel, an Austrian monk, is famous as a botanist and especially as the discoverer of the principle of heredity named after him. The Mendelian theory established the proportions in which characteristics of parents are inherited by their offspring.

Mendel was born into a peasant family in 1822 at Heinzendorf, Moravia. Twice he tried to become a high school teacher and twice he failed in his examinations. He became a monk and finally abbot of Brunn. He paid for the education of his three nephews and gave many anonymous gifts. Experiments that he conducted in the monastery garden are the recognized foundation of all modern scientific knowledge of the laws of heredity, applying to all forms of life. Mendel experimented with peas, crossing different varieties. He made public the results of his work in a treatise called

*Plant Hybridization* on January 6, 1865, and died in 1884, almost unknown. It was in 1900 that three botanists rediscovered his work.

## LOUIS PASTEUR

Louis Pasteur, French chemist, attended the Royal College at Besançon and in 1842 received the "baccalauréat ès sciences." He had attended primary and secondary schools in Arbois where his father was a tanner. He was admitted to the École Normale in 1843 and attended the lectures at the Sorbonne where he received his earliest serious incentive to study chemistry.

His first major piece of research was on racemic acid, in the autumn of 1848, while in Dijon as professor of physics. At the beginning of the next year, he was transferred to Strasbourg as professor of chemistry. Here he married Mlle. Marie Laurent and won the Ribbon of Honor for further work with racemic acid. While serving as professor and dean of the Faculty of Sciences at Lille, he turned to discovering the causes of disease in wine and beer. The alcohol industry was changed completely by these experiments, the results of which he announced after going to the École Normale as director of scientific studies. Here he continued work on fermentation. The English surgeon Joseph Lister was able to revolutionize surgery in the light of discoveries by Pasteur, who was now a leading scientist with honors at home and abroad.

The silk industry of France and all the other silk-growing countries was saved as the outcome of Pasteur's investigations into the diseases of silkworms. His work on the "world of the infinitely small," as he called it, continued with his study of the cattle scourge, anthrax, but he deviated from this disease to study chicken cholera. For both he found a control. It has been estimated that the value of his industrial discoveries was sufficient to cover the cost of the war indemnity paid by France to Germany in 1870.

In 1873 Pasteur became a member of the French Academy of Medicine and in 1874 he received a life pension from the National Assembly. On July 6, 1885, he performed his most dramatic experiment, the inoculation of a child who had been bitten by a mad dog. His successful treatment for rabies led to the foundation of the Institut Pasteur in 1888.

Pasteur celebrated his seventy-second birthday on December 27, 1894, and died on the 28th of the following September near St. Cloud.

## HENRY GEORGE

Henry George, political economist, was born in Philadelphia, on September 2, 1839. He left school at the age of fourteen and, after a period of wandering, settled in San Francisco. By this time he had learned typesetting and thereafter he served in almost every branch of the printing industry. In 1861 he was married, and he became the father of two children.

After several years of unsteady employment and dire poverty, he joined the staff of the *San Francisco Times* where he rapidly rose to the position of managing editor. His subsequent career included important executive posts with various newspapers, and a minor state office.

The latter part of his life was devoted to expanding his theory of land value and the single tax, his answer to the riddle of poverty attending the march of progress. During those years he lectured and traveled widely, visiting England, Ireland, and Australia. The best known of his books and pamphlets is *Progress and Poverty*. Henry George ran for several political offices, including the Mayorship of New York.

## ALEXANDER GRAHAM BELL

Upon completing his course at Edinburgh University, Alexander Graham Bell, inventor of the telephone, received a diploma

training in his father's system for curing impediments of speech. He attained a knowledge of the human voice, sound and vibration, which aided him greatly in his electrical discoveries.

Born in Edinburgh, Scotland, on March 3, 1847, Bell came to America in 1871. As professor of vocal physiology at Boston University his interest turned to telegraphy and he discovered that telegraph wires would transmit sound. Thomas A. Watson was chosen as Bell's assistant in 1874. Watson was to make electrical instruments from ideas supplied by Bell. The telephone was born on June 2, 1875. Watson was working in one room and Bell in another when, suddenly, they heard a strange sound. Bell summoned Watson and asked him to construct with all possible haste a sound-conveying apparatus according to new specifications. The resulting crude instrument built in ten months—an old cigar box, two hundred feet of wire and two magnets—was the first speaking telephone. Forty years later Bell and Watson used this same model in the first long-distance talk between New York and San Francisco.

The next year Bell obtained a patent, the most valuable single patent ever issued in any country, but marketing it was another matter. He began a series of lectures with exhibits to educate the public to his invention's possibilities.

Within a year Bell succeeded in making his telephone commercially practical. In less than forty years the enterprise had returned to its shareholders more than \$2,000 for each dollar originally invested. Bell was married to Mabel Hubbard, daughter of one of his loyal associates.

In 1880 the French government gave Bell the Volta prize of \$10,000 and in 1882 added to it the Cross of the Legion of Honor. The inventor used the money to found the Volta Bureau at Washington for the study of deafness. He invented the 'photophone,' basis for present-day talking motion pictures, the Graphophone, counterpart of today's phonograph; and the telephonic probe, an instrument for locating bullets or other substances in human bodies. Bell died on August 2, 1922, at the age of seventy-five.

## MARK TWAIN

Samuel Langhorne Clemens, American author, was better known as Mark Twain, a river term meaning two fathoms of water, which he adopted as a pen name. He began his literary career before the age of eighteen by writing for his brother's small paper, the *Hannibal Journal*. Born on November 30, 1835, in Florida, Missouri, Clemens was the fourth child of a poor merchant. Clemens, not yet twelve, left school to become a printer's apprentice.

An urge to see the world seized him in 1853 and he set out, working as a printer in St. Louis, New York and Philadelphia. Next a projected trip to Brazil took him no further than the Mississippi River, where he was sidetracked by a desire to become a pilot. About the time of the Civil War, Clemens took up his next profession—mining. During bad weather he wrote sketches to amuse himself, signing some of them "Josh" and sending them to the *Enterprise* at Virginia City, Nevada. Joseph T. Goodman, the publisher, used Clemens's sketches, recognized his ability and offered him a job as local editor at \$25 a week. The miner walked 125 miles over rough roads to accept the job. He was successful from the start and was sent to cover the first Nevada Legislature convened at Carson City. It was here that he started signing his stories "Mark Twain." He worked in San Francisco for a while and then returned to mining. He discovered no fortune but he did write the story of the 'Jumping Frog' which carried the fame all over America.

Clemens became a highly paid lecturer and his writings were in demand. In 1870 he was married to Olivia Langdon of Elmira, New York. In Hartford and Elmira he wrote the books for which he is most noted—*Tom Sawyer*, *Huckleberry Finn*, *The Prince and the Pauper*, and *A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court*. Financial reverses forced Clemens to seek a cheaper way of life in Europe. After a world lecture tour, he lived in London and Vienna for four years. When his wife died in Florence in 1891, he returned to New York. Later he bought an estate at Redding, Connecticut, where he died in 1910.

hill built a beautiful home, Stormfield, where he passed the last two years of his life. Heart trouble caused his death on April 21, 1910.

## THOMAS HARDY

Thomas Hardy was unable to decide for a time between architecture and literature as a profession, because he had studied both. Literature eventually won out and gave England an author who was in his lifetime the leading man of English letters. Hardy was born on June 2, 1840, in Dorsetshire, educated at the local schools and apprenticed to an architect of the district. In 1862 he went to London where he won recognition in the field of architecture and also had a short story published.

Hardy never wrote anything more artistically perfect than *Under the Greenwood Tree*, but his first popular success was *Far from the Madding Crowd*, which was attributed by many to George Eliot when it was published anonymously in 1874. *The Return of the Native* is generally considered his greatest novel. Famous also are *Tess of the D'Urbervilles* and *Jude the Obscure*.

The Order of Merit was conferred upon Hardy in 1910. His first wife died in 1912 and two years later he married a second time. He died on January 11, 1928. His ashes were buried in Westminster Abbey, but because of his love for his native Wessex, his heart was buried in the parish churchyard.

## ROBERT LOUIS STEVENSON

Robert Louis Stevenson, Scottish writer, was a brave soul. In spite of poverty and illness, he wrote cheerfully. His novels are valuable for themselves and because they signalize a return to the romantic spirit of Scotland's earlier novelist, Sir Walter Scott. The book that brought him fame was *Treasure Island*—one of the greatest of all adventure tales, a pirate

story written in 1883. *Kidnapped* came three years later as did the unforgettable *Dr Jekyll and Mr Hyde*, a short story, the most widely known of Stevenson's works. Stevenson also wrote delightful essays, some of the best of them in *Travels with a Donkey*, a book in which he summed up his personality saying "this world appears a brave gymnasium, full of sea-bull-fight and horse exercise and bracing manly virtues." *A Child's Garden of Verses* contains Stevenson's children's poems. *Travels with a Donkey* is the record of a trip through France.

Stevenson came to America in 1879, married Mrs Osborne, a widow, in California, and went with her and her two children to Samoa, in the South Seas. There he built a home and remained until his death. He was born at Edinburgh, November 13, 1850, and died on December 3, 1895. To the natives of Samoa he was known as "Tusitala," the teller. On his grave his epitaph is inscribed as he had written it: "Here he lies where he longed to be. Home is the sailor, home from the sea."

## SUSAN B. ANTHONY

Susan Brownell Anthony was born in Adams, Massachusetts, on February 15, 1820. Her father a Quaker and an abolitionist, was a cotton manufacturer, and her family was noted for its adherence to moral principle and for its strong opinions on women. A keen mind and a good education well qualified her for the teaching profession which, after fifteen years, she deserted for the lecture platform and literature.

Her first public interest was the temperance movement. For a time she was an agent for the Anti-Slavery Society. It was eventually the problem of women's equality—especially the suffrage movement—claimed her more attention. In this cause she met and defied opposition of every kind. She was the first woman to present a petition in the Federal courts for the right to cast a vote in a presidential election.

Miss Anthony was aggressive, and she could when necessary demand, exchange words of blows. Yet she succeeded in

winning the respect and honor of many, and had the satisfaction of seeing equal suffrage granted in four States before she died in Rochester, New York, on March 13, 1906, leaving all of her small estate to the cause she had served

## OSCAR WILDE

Oscar Wilde, Irish poet, playwright and wit, was an apostle of the creed "art for art's sake." In college he made himself extremely unpopular by such aesthetic poses as wearing his hair long, decriing manly sports and decorating his rooms with peacock feathers, lilies, blue china and other *objets d'art*. Although his fellow students ducked him in the river and wrecked his room, they failed to effect a cure. His friends disbelieved tales of his moral looseness until in 1895 he was convicted of a serious moral offense and sentenced to two years of penal servitude. Thus was the end of his career. After his release from prison, Wilde lived mainly on the Continent. He died in Paris on November 30, 1900, at the age of forty-four.

Among Wilde's writings were two volumes of fairy tales, poetry, including *The Ballad of Reading Gaol* and *De Profundis*; and dramas such as *Lady Windermere's Fan* and *The Importance of Being Earnest*. He was unable to obtain a license to produce his drama *Salome* in England, it was brought out in Paris by Sarah Bernhardt.

## WILLIAM SCHWENK GILBERT

In 1871 Sir William Schwenk Gilbert, English light opera librettist and poet, began his collaboration with the composer Sir Arthur Sullivan, which lasted for more than twenty years. Among the light operas produced by the team were *The Pirates of Penzance*, which was presented in New York and ran for more than 400 nights in London; *Trial by Jury*; *The Gondoliers*, *Patience*, *Princess Ida*; *Iolanthe*; *The Yeomen of*

*the Guard. H. M. S. Pinafore Ruddigore* and *The Mikado* the favorite of the general public Gilbert deserves credit for some of the music in addition to the librettos. The meters and frequently the rhythms were invented by him.

Sir William, knighted in 1907 was born in London on November 18 1836. He entered Civil Service work, but disliked the routine and took up law instead. In 1861 he began to contribute comic verse with clever humorous illustrations to the periodical *Fun* using the signature "Bab," and calling them *Bab Ballads*. He also served as dramatic critic to the *Illustrated Times*. He was drowned at Harrow Weald, Middlesex, on May 29, 1911.

## ARTHUR SULLIVAN

The church hymn *Onward, Christian Soldiers* was written by the English composer Sir Arthur Seymour Sullivan. Another of his famous compositions is *The Lost Chord*, which was probably the most successful English song of the nineteenth century. However, he is far more widely known as the collaborator of Sir William Schwenk Gilbert, with whom he produced an enchanting series of the world's most popular light operas. Sir Arthur composed *The Mikado, H.M.S. Pinafore; The Pirates of Penzance, Iolanthe, The Gondoliers, Patience*, etc. Sullivan composed other works including an oratorio *The Light of the World*, a cantata *The Martyr of Antioch*, incidental music to Alfred Tennent's *Forever*, a ballet and a grand opera *Lacme* based upon a Scott's novel which was a failure in the theater.

Sir Arthur was born at Lambeth on May 13 1842. His father was an Irish musician and his mother had some Italian blood. By the time he was eight, the boy was known to play every wind instrument in the house. In 1862 he became first organist at Covent Garden. He was also principal of the National Training School for Music and conductor of the Leeds Festivals and of the Philharmonic Society. He died on November 22 1900.

## PHINEAS TAYLOR BARNUM

The showman Phineas Taylor Barnum, born at Bethel, Connecticut, on July 5, 1810, was the son of a farmer. Phineas, who had no inclination for farm labor, was successively a clerk in a store, editor of a paper, village storekeeper and the exhibitor of Joice Heth, the alleged nurse of George Washington. This latter exploit decided his career, and he became the head of a small traveling company of performers. In 1840 he bought the American Museum in New York. Among his most notable achievements as a showman were naming and exhibiting the midget General Tom Thumb, bringing the Swedish singer Jenny Lind to America, purchasing Jumbo the elephant, and in 1874 organizing the circus, "Barnum's Greatest Show on Earth."

Barnum was not only a showman. He wrote books, lectured before American and European audiences and served in the Connecticut legislature. He was also mayor of Bridgeport, which was his home for forty-five years. He helped to plan and build the eastern part of the city and made donations to its civic institutions. He died on April 7, 1891.

## CHRISTOPHER (KIT) CARSON

For one period of sixteen years during his life as a soldier and hunter, Christopher (Kit) Carson supplied every bit of his own food with his rifle. He was born on December 24, 1809, and was apprenticed to a saddler at the age of fifteen. Two years later he joined an overland expedition to Santa Fe, New Mexico. He became a trapper, roaming the plains between the Rocky Mountains and the Pacific Ocean, and excelled even the Indians at hunting and mountain-climbing. In 1842 his Indian wife died, and he took his daughter to St. Louis to be educated. There he was engaged as a guide to Lieutenant John C. Fremont's first expedition to explore the Rockies.

The next year Carson returned to New Mexico, married a

Spanish lady and resumed hunting and trapping. Sheep were scarce in the new state of California, and in 1833 Carson drove a flock of 6,500 sheep across the mountains from New Mexico into California. At Taos Carson acted as the Indian agent for that district and was successful in that capacity. He was made a brigadier general for his services during the Civil War, after which he returned to the post of Indian agent. Carson died on May 23, 1868.

## MARY BAKER EDDY

Staten Island and New York. Born near Stapleton, Staten Island, on May 27, 1794. Vanderbilt saw his ferry line grow, and eventually he entered other transportation enterprises. Besides his river and harbor boats he built, in 1817, a steamer to run between New York and New Brunswick, New Jersey, and served as its captain. In 1851 he established a fast line to California, transferring passengers across the Isthmus of Nicaragua. This enterprise was said to have brought him \$10,000,000. He also offered service between New York and Le Havre, France.

Vanderbilt bought a large part of the New York and Harlem Railroad in 1863 and later gained control of the Hudson River Railroad and the New York Central. He became president of the New York Central in 1867. Vanderbilt's most noteworthy public benefaction was his gift of \$1,000,000 for the founding of Vanderbilt University at Nashville, Tennessee. His fortune was estimated at \$100,000,000 when he died on January 4, 1877.

## ANDREW CARNEGIE

None of the makers of great fortunes started with less than did Andrew Carnegie when, at the age of ten, he became a bobbin-boy at twenty cents a day in the mills of Allegheny, Pennsylvania. Born in Dunfermline, Scotland, on November 25, 1835, the future ironmaster and philanthropist came to America with his family. He learned clerical and secretarial work and telegraphy, and with this knowledge and his own immense capabilities he gradually progressed through various jobs to a position of responsibility with the Pennsylvania Railroad. In 1862 Carnegie entered the iron business in which he earned his fabulous fortune. When he retired in 1901 his company was valued at \$500,000,000. He died on August 11, 1919.

Carnegie believed that "surplus wealth is a sacred trust to be administered for the highest good of the people." To this end he donated sums amounting to more than \$300,000,000. It is probable that none of his gifts did more good than those given

to public libraries, including \$60 000 000 for over 3 000 municipal library buildings

## JOHN D ROCKEFELLER

John Davison Rockefeller, Senior, American philanthropist and financier, was the greatest getter and giver of money in the world's history. Born on July 8 1839, he amassed his colossal fortune from oil, mines, steel and other industries. The Standard Oil Company, of which he was president, was incorporated in 1870 with a capitalization of \$1 000 000. Thus at thirty-one Rockefeller held an eminent position in business. At the time the company's monopoly was dissolved by the courts in 1892 Rockefeller's fortune was estimated at between \$500,000,000 and \$1,000,000,000, and he became known as the nation's first 'billionaire'. Among his many gifts were \$100,325,000 to the Rockefeller Foundation, \$1 000 000 to the Rockefeller Institute of Medical Research, \$100,000 to the Baptist Missionary Union and about \$500 000 000 to various educational institutions.

One of Rockefeller's greatest desires in his later years was to live to be 100, but hardening of the heart muscles caused his death on May 23, 1937, at the age of ninety-seven at his winter home in Ormond Beach, Florida. He left a net estate of \$2,110 837.

## JOHN PIERPONT MORGAN

The American financier John Pierpont Morgan was born on April 17, 1837, received his education both in Germany and in the United States. He began his business career in the banking house of Drexel, Sherman & Company, New York City. When he became head of the firm of Drexel, Morgan & Company, he changed its name to J. P. Morgan & Company. Among his business enterprises were the control of several

railroad companies and anthracite and soft coal trusts In 1901 he organized the United States Steel Corporation, which had a capitalization of \$1,100,000,000 and dominated the steel industry of the United States Probably no other American capitalist was more widely known or thoroughly trusted in Europe, especially in England, than Morgan.

Morgan gave extensively to many charities and institutions He was an enthusiastic yachtsman and one of the world's greatest art collectors In 1913 the Metropolitan Museum of Art exhibited, in thirteen galleries, most of his collection He built a library adjoining his home to house his rare library of manuscripts and handsomely bound books Morgan died in Rome, Italy, on March 31, 1913

## CECIL JOHN RHODES

Cecil John Rhodes, South African financier and statesman, was subjected to criticism and applause, called both a land grabber and an empire builder, a statesman and an unscrupulous speculator Rapid success in the Kimberley diamond fields of South Africa made Rhodes a millionaire at nineteen The aggrandizement of the British Empire was the object of his life, and South Africa was the area over which he hoped to establish English rule To this end he devoted his energies He became a leading financier as well as a statesman, and as a result of his efforts Bechuanaland and Rhodesia came under British control In 1890 Rhodes began his term as premier of Cape Colony His personal power ended with the Jameson Raid, an unfortunate attempt to bring about a rebellion in the Transvaal

After resigning his premiership, the statesman devoted his interests to Rhodesia, and in 1896 he terminated a native rebellion by an act of intrepid courage Rhodes was born on July 5, 1853, and died on March 26, 1902 His will set up scholarships at Oxford University, open to about 100 candidates from Great Britain and to ninety from the United States

The French novelist Émile Édouard Charles Antoine Zola was born in Paris on April 2, 1850. He left the Lycée Saint Louis in 1860 failing to take his degree due to a deficiency in literature. He abandoned his work as a clerk in a business house to devote his energies to writing, and for a time he lived in extreme poverty. One of his best friends was the artist Paul Cézanne. Eventually he obtained employment as a reporter in a publisher's firm, and his articles on literature and art as well as his novel *Thérèse Raquin* began to attract attention. Next Zola began his series of some twenty novels based on the Rougon-Macquart family whom he created and carried through a period of French history. Many of these books were not great popular successes but with *L'Assommoir*, an epic of drink, Zola's fame was established. As his star rose, he seemed to have less and less in common with his bohemian friend Cézanne. He became the outstanding novelist of the day and *Nana* and *Le Débâcle* sold even more copies than *L'Assommoir*. After reading *L'Œuvre*, in which he saw himself Cézanne refused to see Zola. In addition to these books, Zola's other publications included a series of three romances, a series of some novels in which he propounded his social gospel, a volume of plays, several volumes of criticism and some short stories. Men of letters, artists and politicians opposed all his parties.

Zola played a very important part in the case of Alfred Dreyfus, a French army officer falsely charged with treason. Zola was thoroughly convinced of the man's innocence, and in an attempt to bring about a reopening of the case, he published an open letter to the president of the Republic entitled "*J'accuse*" in which he charged the government with irregularities in the case. The letter achieved Zola's purpose—a reopening of the case—but he himself was also brought to trial and a verdict lodged against him. He went to England where he remained until a decree for offenders connected with the Dreyfus case permitted his return to Paris.

Zola was made a Knight of the Legion of Honor in 1895.

and an officer in 1893, but after his trouble over the Dreyfus affair, his name was removed from the rolls. He was several times a candidate for the French Academy but was repeatedly denied admission. Zola was accidentally asphyxiated in his Paris home by the fumes from a defective flue. He was found dead in his bedroom on September 29, 1902. When Cézanne heard of his death he cried a long while and shut himself up in his studio for a day.

## ANATOLE FRANCE

For thirty years French literature was dominated by Jacques Anatole Thibault, whose pseudonym was Anatole France. He was an artist acclaimed by the critics and also a publicist who influenced the common people. No one since Voltaire had enjoyed a reputation such as this man, who, in his old age, was honored as a genius and a patriarch. France, whose father was a bookseller, was born in Paris on April 16, 1844. He was studious and intelligent, but he liked reading better than writing. He composed advertising catch phrases for publishers and contributed a weekly article to the *Univers Illustré*. His poetry was written for his own entertainment. *The Crime of Sylvestre Bonnard*, a novel that appeared in 1881, was well received by the critics.

In 1883 France met Madame Arman de Caillavet, a clever and active woman with many friends among the leading figures in politics and society. She who was France's friend throughout his life, encouraged him to write and worked to bring about his fame. The dedication of one of his books reads "To Madame Caillavet, this book which I should not have written without her help, for without her help I should write no books." For forty years Anatole France pursued his literary career, publishing nearly fifty volumes in addition to his early verse. France was a competent storyteller, a scholar of antiquity and a student of the human race. Among his books are *Thais*, *The Red Lily*, *Penguin Island*, *The Revolt of the Angels*,

*Little Pierre* and a biography of Joan of Arc. He was named an officer of the Legion of Honor in 1895 and elected to the French Academy in 1896.

At the beginning of his career France was primarily a skeptic, but about 1900 his opinions began to change. He felt a decided sympathy for progressive parties and gradually went over to the revolutionary camp. He became a participant in one of the most famous incidents in French history when he joined the novelist Émile Zola in defending the French officer Alfred Dreyfus against charges of treason. World War I disturbed France's philosophy and left him uncertain of the destiny of the human race. He died in Tours on October 13, 1924.

## ALFRED DREYFUS

Alfred Dreyfus was a French soldier who became famous because he was the victim of a judicial error which aroused deep feeling throughout the world. Dreyfus, born on October 9, 1859, became a captain in the army in 1889. In 1894 an anonymous letter showing that a French officer was betraying his country fell into the hands of the authorities. Dreyfus was accused because the handwriting closely resembled his. He protested his innocence, but was found guilty and interned on Devil's Island in 1895.

An official at the Ministry of War discovered that the writer of the letter was an officer, Major Esterhazy, who was in debt. The government was slow to admit its mistake and grant a new trial. In the meantime, there was vigorous agitation in favor of Dreyfus, highlighted by the intervention of the novelist Émile Zola, who wrote an open letter to the president of the Republic entitled "J'accuse." Dreyfus was set free in 1899, but he was not completely rehabilitated until 1906. He re-entered the army during World War I and became a lieutenant colonel and an officer of the Legion of Honor. He died on July 12, 1925.

## JAMES ABBOTT McNEILL WHISTLER

James Abbott McNeill Whistler, American artist, was born in Lowell, Massachusetts, on July 10, 1834. When his father was invited to build a railroad in Russia, James joined him and began his study of art there. He left the United States Military Academy at West Point because he failed in chemistry. After attempting to enter the Navy, he became a draughtsman in the Coast and Geodetic Survey, but abandoned this to study art in Paris. For many years his peculiarities and quarrels were better known than his works. One of his most famous battles was with the critic John Ruskin whom Whistler sued for libel. Whistler won, and was awarded a farthing which he wore as a watch charm. He died in London on July 17, 1903.

Whistler executed delicate water colors and landscapes, the most famous of which are his "Nocturnes." Among his notable portraits is his most popular painting, the portrait of his mother. However, many consider his etchings the highest product of his art, classing them with those of Rembrandt, the world's greatest etcher. One of his finest creations as a mural decorator is the "Peacock Room," in blue and gold, formerly in a London home, but later transferred to the Freer Gallery in Washington, D. C.

## PAUL CÉZANNE

The aim of Paul Cézanne, French painter, was to combine impressionism with the art of the past. His early painting was concerned more with expressing the exaltation of his own feelings than with color effects, but association with the impressionist artist Camille Pissarro helped him to become aware of the world of color. His early work includes a *Resurrection of Lazarus* and *The Banquet*. Cézanne excelled in still life pictures, of which the *Compotier* and *The Black Marble Clock* are among the most celebrated. forceful portraits, notable among which are those of Gustav Geffroy, of Madame Cézanne, and many self-portraits and stately, solid landscapes such as

*La route du Château Noir, L'Estaque*, and numerous views of Mount Sainte-Victoire. Among the masterpieces of his latter years are his pictures of men playing cards.

Cézanne was born in Aix on January 19, 1839. He formed a boyhood friendship with the novelist Émile Zola and the two dedicated themselves to art. They lived in Paris but Cézanne never felt at home there and repeatedly returned to Aix. Cézanne's name was practically unknown in Paris until an exhibition in 1904 attracted attention. This was his only taste of the fame to be accorded his works until after his death. He died on October 23, 1906. It was his destiny to become perhaps the leading influence on modern art.

## VINCENT VAN GOGH

The shadow of insanity under which the Dutch painter Vincent van Gogh lived during the last years of his life did not deter him from his work. In fact this was his greatest period. He continued to paint until the day of his death, executing with thick, pure colors and swirling strokes pictures that have completely justified the faith of his brother Theo, who was one of the few who believed in him. Among Van Gogh's notable pictures are *The Potato Eaters*, *Peasants*, *Portrait of a Young Man*, several *Sunflowers*, many *Self-Portraits*, the series known as *L'Arlesienne*, *Wheatfields with a Setting Sun*, *The Rain*, *Garden at Arles*, and *The Rain of L'Arles*.

Van Gogh, who was born in Groot Zundert, Holland, on March 3, 1853, had a tortured time settling upon a career. He worked for picture dealers, studied theology and imbibed with ideals of Christian communism, lived among the miners in a coal region. Finally he began to study art, joining Theo in Paris in 1886. Here he learned to discard the brownish tints that had characterized his earlier work and paint with clear, luminous colors. In 1888 he went to Arles in Southern France, where he was joined by Paul Gauguin. In a fit of insanity he threatened Gauguin's life and then cut off one of his own ears. Fearing

the recurrence of such wild excesses, he finally shot himself and died on July 29, 1890.

## PAUL GAUGUIN

For Paul Gauguin, one of the pioneers of the post-impressionist movement in art, painting was at first a hobby for leisure hours. The French artist was born in Paris on June 17, 1848. As a boy he went to sea then joined a firm of stock-brokers, and married a cultured Danish woman. After becoming acquainted with the painter Camille Pissarro and buying some of his pictures, he began working with the impressionists, giving up his job and devoting himself wholly to art. He passed some time in southern France in 1888, visiting the Dutch artist Vincent van Gogh and from then on he abandoned impressionism for a much more radical decorative style of his own. Among the most notable paintings of this period are *The Women of Arles*, a portrait of Meyer de Haan, *Landscape of Arles*, *The Yellow Christ*, and the diabolic original *Self-Portrait*, painted in Brittany.

In 1891 Gauguin went to Tahiti where he spent the rest of his life except for a brief visit to Paris, living like a native. Among his Tahitian paintings which created a sensation in Paris were brown nudes in bright tropical landscapes such as *Papeete*, *Tahiti*, *The White Horse*, *Where Do We Come From?* and *Maori Venus*. From this period came also *The Spirit of the Dead Watching*, and sculpture in stone and wood. In 1895 Gauguin returned to Tahiti and died on May 9, 1903, on the Isle of Domuniqué. His satanic personality inspired the novelist Somerset Maugham to write *The Moon and Sixpence*.

## CLAUDE DEBUSSY

The French composer Claude Achille Debussy was born at St. Germain on August 22, 1862. Like many other musicians of his country, he studied at the Paris Conservatory and com-

peted for the Grand Prix de Rome, which he won with a cantata *L'Enfant prodigue*. His symphonic suite, *Printemps*, and *La Damoiselle Élue*, a work inspired by Dante Gabriel Rossetti's *The Blessed Damozel*, were both submitted in the competition, but were so highly individual in character that the judges took exception to them. After having passed some years in Italy, Debussy made a visit to Russia, where he absorbed much native music especially that of Modest Moussorgsky.

Debussy gained recognition slowly, but in 1893 the National Society of Music first performed *La Damoiselle Élue*, and the following year *Prélude à l'après-midi d'un faune* (*The Afternoon of a Faun*), one of his most popular works. His only opera, *Pelléas et Mélisande*, was produced in 1902, but not understood, it, too, has come into its own. Debussy also composed songs and nocturnes and made important contributions to piano literature. He died at Paris on March 26 1918. His music is fragile and elusive like impressionist painting, and it is believed that he took the name "nocturne" from the American artist Whistler.

## AUGUSTE RODIN

The French sculptor Auguste Rodin was born in Paris in 1840. The first indication of the originality that characterizes his work was shown in 1864 in his statue *The Man with a Broken Nose*. From 1871 to 1877 Rodin worked in Brussels for the Belgian artist Van Rasbourg. In 1883 he began the powerful *Portal of Hell*, most elaborate of all his works, inspired by the Italian poet Dante's epic *The Divine Comedy*.

At the Exposition in Paris in 1900 the city reluctantly financed the erection of a building outside the entrance gates in which Rodin showed many of his works including *The Burghers of Calais* and *Portal of Hell*, still quite incomplete. Rodin's best known etching is a portrait of the French writer Victor Hugo. Other outstanding works are *The Age of Bronze*, *The Kiss*, exhibited for the first time in 1898 and the *Hand*

of God, shown in London in 1905 In 1904 Rodin succeeded the American artist James Whistler as president of the International Society of Sculptors, Painters and Engravers He died on November 17, 1917, recognized at last after years of hatred, so keen a hate,' he said, "that if Paris had been Italy in the time of the Borgias, I should have been poisoned" Rodin made the most of every expression, every fleeting thought of humanity His surfaces vibrate

## THOMAS ALVA EDISON

In the history of applied science, Thomas Alva Edison stands alone One thousand two hundred patents are credited to him, and a Congressional committee once placed the value of his inventions at \$15,599,000 He was a man of tremendous energy and phenomenal mind, but his terse explanation of his success was "Two per cent inspiration and ninety-eight per cent perspiration"

The inventor was born in Milan, Ohio, on February 11, 1847, and passed part of his brief boyhood in Port Huron, Michigan When he was twelve he was working as a trainboy. Three years later, as a sideline, he was publishing a small newspaper *The Grand Trunk Herald* for the railroad employees He was sixteen when, as a reward for rescuing from drowning the son of a railroad station agent, he was taught telegraphy He became a capable operator but, after transferring to this line of work, his fondness for reading and experiment caused the loss of each job he held In 1864 he invented an automatic telegraph repeater Five years later he sold four patents for \$40,000 which he used to set up a laboratory in Newark, N. J. In 1876, after having been engaged for several years in the manufacture of products of his creation, ill health forced him to "retire" to Menlo Park, N. J., where, thenceforward, he confined himself to investigation and invention

Edison's inventions included a typewriter, the phonograph, the incandescent lamp, a process for making plate glass, a motion picture camera and a receiving apparatus for radio sets

## THEODORE ROOSEVELT

In the colorful life of Theodore Roosevelt, twenty-sixth President of the United States, no other event was more dramatic than his charge up San Juan Hill. In this charge in Cuba during the Spanish-American War, Roosevelt led the "Rough Riders," a cavalry regiment of cowboys, hunters, Indians, and athletes from all over the country. Then came sweep the nation, and when Roosevelt returned to the United States, he was the man of the hour.

Roosevelt was born in New York City on October 9, 1858. He was a delicate child, but overcame his physical weakness through vigorous exercise and fighting determination. He was an ardent reader of James Fenimore Cooper's *Leatherstocking Tales* and other books of all kinds, and intensely interested in science. After he graduated from Harvard in 1882, he wrote *The Naval History of 1812*, a book that is still regarded as an authority. Roosevelt wrote many other books, one of the most notable of which was *Winning of the West*. The youngest man in the New York Assembly in 1881, he became the minority leader and embarked upon a campaign of reform. When his legislative career closed, Roosevelt went out West to a cattle ranch. He returned in two years to run for mayor of New York, and although he was not elected, he continued his political career as a member of the United States Civil Service Commission.

President of the New York Police Board, and Assistant Secretary of the Navy

After the Spanish-American War Roosevelt was ready for his next public office, the governorship of New York. He defied both political machines. On March 4, 1901, he was inaugurated as Vice-President of the United States, and when McKinley was assassinated the following September, Roosevelt stepped into the presidency. He was re-elected in 1904. Among the many achievements of his administration were the Panama Canal, the conservation of natural resources, and arranging a peace between Russia and Japan in 1905, for which he received the Nobel prize. His home life was unusually happy and his personal example an inspiration to youth. Three weeks after leaving the presidency, Roosevelt went on a year's hunting trip to Africa. He returned by way of Europe, where he was everywhere warmly received. He ran for the presidency again in 1912 as candidate of the Progressive Party. He made a trip to South America in 1913 exploring an unknown river, later named the Rio Téodoro. Roosevelt died on January 6, 1919.

## ROBERT EDWIN PEARY

Robert Edwin Peary, American Arctic explorer, made his first trip to the North in 1886. In 1891-92 he served as chief of the Arctic expedition of the Academy of Natural Sciences of Philadelphia. On this trip he made a most remarkable polar sledge journey, traversing Greenland from McCormick Bay to Independence Bay, a distance of 1,300 miles. Later journeys to Greenland were followed in 1898-1902 by his most important expedition in search of the North Pole. Although he gained much useful information, including a conclusive determination of Greenland's northern limits, he was forced to abandon his attempt to reach the pole.

In 1906 Peary came within 203 miles of his goal, and on April 6, 1909, he succeeded in reaching it. His achievement was recognized with honors throughout the world. He received

the thanks of Congress, a degree of Doctor of Laws from the University of Edinburgh as well as gold medals from many learned societies, and he was made a rear admiral. Peary was born on May 6, 1856, and died on February 20, 1920.

## WILLIAM JENNINGS BRYAN

At the national convention of the Democratic Party in July of 1896 the colorful American statesman William Jennings Bryan gained unchallenged mastery over the party by his oration which ended with the well known words: "You shall not press down upon the brow of labor this crown of thorns—you shall not crucify mankind upon a cross of gold." During his service in Congress Bryan previously had established his reputation as an orator and as an advocate of "free silver"—that is, free and unlimited coinage of silver at the ratio of sixteen ounces of silver to one ounce of gold. Bryan was nominated as presidential candidate, but he was defeated by William McKinley. None of his subsequent attempts to obtain the presidency was successful.

President Woodrow Wilson appointed Bryan as Secretary of State in 1913, Bryan resigned this position in 1915. He was a leader in the prohibition movement. A defender of old-fashioned religious beliefs and of a literal interpretation of the Bible, his last public appearance was at the trial of a Tennessee school teacher charged with teaching evolution. Bryan was born on March 9, 1860, and died on July 26, 1925.

## ✓ HENRY FORD

Henry Ford began his career as an American automobile manufacturer in 1891. His first successful machine was completed in 1893 and operated in Detroit until it was sold in 1895. The Ford Motor Company was organized on June 16, 1903, and the first car built by the company was sold on July 23. During that year 1,708 automobiles were built and sold.

In 1941 the company's valuation was placed at \$718,660,357

Henry Ford was born in Wayne County, Michigan, on July 30, 1863. At the age of twelve he was spending most of his time in a small machine shop, constructing a steam engine when he was fifteen. In later life his hobbies included farming and conservation of wild life. Among his other interests were the support of the Henry Ford Hospital in Detroit, the restoration of the Wayside Inn made famous by Henry Wadsworth Longfellow, the construction of an early American village named Greenfield and the founding of the Edison Institute with its extensive collection of early Americana. Ford died on April 7, 1947, at Dearborn, Michigan.

## RUDYARD KIPLING

Rudyard Kipling, English poet, novelist and story writer, was born in Bombay, India, on December 30, 1865, and lived there long enough as a child to absorb a lifelong interest in things Indian before his parents sent him back to England to school. His first years in England were passed in a child's torment, as he was placed in the care of a woman who made beatings and cruelty the order of his days. He found refuge in books, reading voraciously, but this haven was almost taken from him by failing eyesight. His mother, returning from India, found him half-blind and wholly cowed. After a period of recuperation he was sent to a school where intelligent and understanding teachers gave him the run of the world of letters and helped shape his own abilities in that world. One of his later books, *Stalky and Co.*, tells the lighter side of his years there, which ended with his return to India to work on the *Civil and Military Gazette* in Lahore. Here his newspaper work added to his knowledge of India and he began his stories about it. His *Plain Tales from the Hills* were started in 1885 to serve as filler for the newspaper when news was scarce. The next year he published *Departmental Duties*, his first book of poetry. Soon afterward he was transferred to the *Allahabad Pioneer*, parent paper of the *Gazette*.

Kipling traveled in China, Japan, India, and America. In 1889 he returned to England, where by the time he was twenty-seven he was famous. In 1892 he married an American girl, and they lived in Vermont for four years. There he wrote some of his most popular works. Kipling went to South Africa during the Boer War, in which he played an active, although unofficial, part. For several years thereafter he and his family alternated between England in summer and the Cape region in winter. A friend of Cecil Rhodes, he also worked with that empire builder in the development of Africa. He died on January 17, 1936.

In 1907 Kipling received the Nobel prize for literature. Besides the two books already mentioned and many volumes of short stories, his best-known works include *Kim*, *The Light That Failed*, *Captains Courageous*, several books for children such as *The Jungle Books*, *Just So Stories*, *Puck of Pook's Hill* and *Rewards and Fairies*, and numerous poems and ballads among the most popular of which are *Gunga Din*, *Mandalay*, *Danny Deevee*, *Fuzzy-Wuzzy*, *Boots* and *The Ladies*.

## EDWARD MacDOWELL

The American composer Edward Alexander MacDowell, who was born on December 18, 1861, began piano lessons at the age of eight, and when he was fifteen he was taken abroad for study. His talents were sufficient to obtain him a recommendation as a teacher in the Frankfort Conservatory, but his youthfulness (he was only twenty) prevented his receiving the appointment. His career as a composer began in his Frankfort student days with his *First Modern Suite for Piano*, which received high praise from the pianist Franz Liszt.

MacDowell remained in Germany until 1888, when he settled in Boston. His fame and success in America were phenomenal. He was in demand as a pianist, and his compositions were immediately popular. In 1896 he became head of the first department of music at Columbia University. Eight years of untiring devotion to this work so undermined his health

that symptoms of mental illness appeared, becoming increasingly acute during the years before his death on January 23, 1908 MacDowell's impressive list of compositions includes orchestral and piano sketches, concertos, piano sonatas and symphonic poems

## JOHN PHILIP SOUSA

It has been said that John Philip Sousa, bandmaster and composer, was to the march what Johann Strauss was to the waltz He wrote more than one hundred marches, including *The Washington Post March Semper Fidelis* and *Stars and Stripes Forever*, which made \$300,000 for its composer. On September 30, 1880 Sousa began his conductorship of the United States Marine Band He held this position for twelve years and brought fame both to himself and the band Sousa's own band, organized in 1892, played at the Chicago Exposition in 1893, toured the United States, visited Europe four times, and in 1910-12 made a trip around the world.

In addition to his marches Sousa composed comic operas, waltzes, overtures and suites, and he wrote three novels He was an excellent horseman and trapshooter and was one of the few men to serve in three branches of the military forces Sousa was born in Washington, D C on November 6, 1854, and died at Reading, Pennsylvania, on March 6, 1932 His body lay in state in Washington and was then buried in the Congressional Cemetery

## VICTOR HERBERT

Victor Herbert's career as a light opera composer began on November 20, 1894, with the production of *Prince Ananias* This was preceded by experience as a cellist in such organizations as the Metropolitan Opera House and the New York Philharmonic orchestras Herbert also had conducted the Pitts-

burgh Symphony Orchestra and an orchestra of his own in New York. He was born in Dublin, Ireland, on February 1, 1859, and received his early musical training in Europe. He came to America in 1886

Herbert was never satisfied by his writing of light opera, although during the twenty years following his initial success he wrote more than a dozen highly successful productions, including such favorites as *Fortune Teller* (1898), *Babes in Toyland* (1903), *Mlle. Modiste* (1905), *Naughty Marietta* (1910), and *Sweethearts* (1913). His ambition to become a grand opera composer was realized in *Natoma*, on an Indian theme. The music for some of the Ziegfeld Follies was written by Herbert and he composed the score for the photoplay *The Birth of a Nation*. He died on May 26, 1924.

## GIACOMO PUCCINI

Giacomo Puccini is ranked by most critics as the greatest Italian operatic composer since Verdi. Puccini was born in 1858. His mother placed him in a school of music, although he showed no talent or interest in it, and a patient teacher aroused his latent genius.

The idea of writing an opera occurred to Puccini when he heard a performance of Verdi's *Aida*. His first attempts were only moderately successful, but his third, *Manon Lescaut*, was immensely popular. This was followed by *La Bohème* which was even more successful. With *Madame Butterfly* he scored his greatest triumph, although it was hissed at its first performance. *La Tosca* was a distinct disappointment at first, but is often sung today. A purely American opera, *The Girl of the Golden West*, which he was commissioned to write by the Metropolitan Opera House, has not maintained its original popularity. In addition to his operas Puccini composed other music, including cantatas. One of these was written in 1919 to celebrate the 2572nd anniversary of the founding of Rome. Puccini died on November 29, 1924.

## ARTURO TOSCANINI

Arturo Toscanini, the greatest orchestral conductor of his time, was born at Parma, Italy, on March 25, 1867. He entered the Parma conservatory and in 1884 conducted one of his own works. His main studies were piano and cello, with high honors in composition. When only nineteen Toscanini made his official debut in Rio de Janeiro, conducting the opera *Aida*. He devoted forty years chiefly to opera, thirty years at La Scala, Milan, and seven with the Metropolitan Opera Company in New York. Since 1929 he has given his energies to concerts, music festivals and radio performances. He directs all his programs from memory.

Toscanini received wide acclaim in 1930 when he took the New York Philharmonic orchestra on a triumphal tour of Europe. He received the 1937 American Hebrew Medal for promoting better understanding between Christians and Jews. In 1940-41 he toured South America, and the next year he led an all-American program in New York, featuring George Gershwin's *Rhapsody in Blue*. Toscanini, who makes his home in New York, has an extraordinary hold upon the affection of the American musical public.

## LUTHER BURBANK

The American naturalist author and plant originator, Luther Burbank, has been called the wizard of horticulture. He was interested chiefly in developing new types of fruits, flowers and vegetables for mankind rather than for science. Burbank, born in Massachusetts on March 7, 1849, was the son of a farmer. He learned wood turning and pattern making, but finding these occupations too confining for one who loved the outdoors, he bought a farm and began his experiments. He developed the Burbank potato, one of the best known of his "vegetable inventions," in 1873. Two years later he moved to California, where he remained until his death on April 11, 1926.

One of Burbank's most extensive lines of work was with prunes and plums, of which he introduced no less than sixty varieties. Among his other developments were ten new types of berries, several vegetables and many flower varieties, including roses, poppies, lilies, gladioli and the Shasta daisy. At one time in his garden there were 80,000 lilies in bloom valued at \$250,000. No horticulturist ever worked on so vast a scale or in such a scientific manner.

## ALFRED NOBEL

Alfred Bernhard Nobel, Swedish inventor of dynamite, provided in his will for the annual award of five prizes, one of which was to go to the person doing the most to promote peace. Nobel was born in Stockholm on October 21, 1833, was educated at Saint Petersburg, Russia, and trained in mechanical engineering in the United States. He devoted his energies to the study of explosives and especially to nitroglycerine, the use of which had resulted in so many accidents that it had been almost discarded. He took out a patent for dynamite in 1862. The total number of his inventions reported filed in Great Britain was 129.

From the manufacture of dynamite and other explosives and from the exploitation of the Baku oil fields, Nobel amassed a fortune. He asserted in 1875 that he controlled fifteen dynamite factories, including several in America. During his latter years he worked at a laboratory in San Remo near Nice, France. He died there on December 10, 1896, leaving the bulk of his fortune in trust for the Nobel prizes.

## WILBUR and ORVILLE WRIGHT

A simple toy, which an Ohio father carried home to his two sons one day in 1878, led to the invention of one of the world's most revolutionary vehicles—the airplane—by Wilbur and Orville Wright.

Wilbur and Orville passed their spare time building toy flying machines for a while, but were forced to earn a living. So they turned to the manufacture of bicycles, achieving no great success. Otto Lilienthal's death in his flying machine in 1896 made a deep impression upon the brothers, and they began the study of aeronautics seriously. Their first test flight, with a plane controlled from the ground by cords, was made at Kitty Hawk, North Carolina, in 1900. Results were encouraging, but Wilbur and Orville saw the need for more experimentation. Everybody was smiling at the Wright boys. They were called visionaries and cranks.

Then came the great day of December 17, 1903, at Kitty Hawk. Wilbur Wright's flight lasted only twelve seconds, but it was the first time in history that a machine carrying a man had left the ground of its own power, described a circle in the air and descended safely to earth. A year later the brothers made a flight of twelve miles at a height of a hundred feet. They offered their invention to the government, but received no reply. Again they wrote to Washington. This time a curt refusal said the government had no time to send a board to Ohio to investigate the claims of a "couple of cranks." On September 9, 1908, Orville broke all records by staying in the air for fifty-seven minutes, and the same day he made another flight taking a passenger. Wilbur created a sensation in New York when he flew from Governor's Island up the Hudson River to Grant's Tomb and back. These early flights were immediately recognized as opening the way for vast developments in the field of aviation. The many technical and mechanical improvements in the design and operation of airplanes have evolved gradually since those epoch-making flights.

President Taft presented gold medals, on behalf of the Aero Club of America, to Wilbur and Orville Wright on June 10, 1909, at the White House. Referring to their achievements, Taft said, "Many great discoveries have come by accident . . . but you planned what you wish to find, and then you worked over it until you found it." In 1942 the Smithsonian Institution at Washington recanted from its previous position, that Samuel P. Langley, American astronomer and physicist, had made the

st airplane flight, and gave full credit to the Wright brothers. Accordingly, in his will the surviving brother, Orville, presented the Kitty Hawk plane to the Smithsonian Institution. Wilbur Wright was born near Millville, Indiana, on April 16, 1867 and died at Dayton, Ohio, on May 30, 1912. Orville Wright was born at the latter city on August 9, 1871, and died at Dayton on January 30, 1948.

## GUGLIELMO MARCONI

Experiments already had been made with electromagnetic waves but the Italian inventor Guglielmo Marconi put wireless telegraphy on a commercial basis when he devised a practical system for using these waves as a means of communication. In 1895 he established wireless communication over distances of more than a mile. From that year on the history of Marconi's work shows one advance after another, each of which marked new and greater use for his invention.

On June 2, 1896 Marconi took out in England the first patent ever granted for wireless telegraphy based on the use of electric waves. The following year from a station erected at Pomezia, Italy, he communicated with a submarine twelve miles under the sea. In 1898 wireless telegraphy was used for the first time as a means of contact between lightships and the shore. On March 3, 1899, its success as a life-saving device was demonstrated. A year later communication was established across the English channel and in the same year wireless was employed in naval maneuvers. The first military use of wireless was during the South African war.

On December 12, 1901, on his first attempt, Marconi sent and received signals across the Atlantic from Poldhu in Cornwall to St. John's in Newfoundland. A year later the American liner *Philadelphia* received messages up to a distance of 700 miles in the daytime and 2,000 miles at night, proving that wireless messages can be received over greater distances at night. In 1910 wireless telegrams were sent 6,000 miles and on September 22, 1918, wireless contact between England and

Australia was first established Marconi began experimenting with short waves in 1916

In 1909 Marconi won the Nobel prize for physics, the Albert Medal of the Royal Society and, in the United States, the Franklin and John Fritz Medals. In the same year he was nominated by the King of Italy to be a member of the Italian senate. After World War I, during which he served in the Italian army and navy, Marconi attended peace conferences in London and Paris. He was made a Marchese in 1929, and in 1931 upon the completion of a radio station in the Vatican, he was made a member of the Vatican Academy. Marconi was born at Bologna on April 25, 1874, and died at Rome on July 20, 1937.

## WOODROW WILSON

Thomas Woodrow Wilson, twenty-eighth President of the United States, was the son of a Presbyterian minister. He was born on December 28, 1856, in Staunton, Va. After being graduated from Princeton and completing post-graduate studies at Virginia and Johns Hopkins universities, he married Ellen Louise Axson who became the mother of his three daughters. She died in 1914 and a year later he married Mrs. Edith Bolling Galt who survived him.

His career in public office began in 1910 when he resigned the presidency of Princeton University, which he had held for eight years, to accept the governorship of New Jersey. A Democrat, his progressive record of achievement in that office won for him the Democratic nomination for the presidency in 1912. He appointed Franklin D. Roosevelt as Assistant Secretary of the Navy. As president, he actively intervened in legislative matters, successfully pressing such projects as the establishment of the Federal Reserve System and the creation of the Federal Trade Commission.

Wilson's policy of neutrality, after war broke out in Europe, drew criticism from both interventionists and pacifists and it was by a slim margin that he was re-elected in 1916. When he

found that war could no longer be avoided, he resolved to prosecute it with maximum efficiency. Thereafter his policy of centralizing authority and freeing the military from political interference was largely responsible for the swift development of the nation's armed forces.

On January 8, 1918, Wilson had enunciated his "Fourteen Points" which were to be the basis for peace. When the fighting ceased, he twice journeyed to Europe to participate in the treaty negotiations. On his second return, against the advice of physicians, he undertook a tour of the country to enlist support for American membership in the League of Nations which he had been one of the first to advocate. It was in the middle of this trip that he suffered a collapse that left him an invalid until his death on February 3, 1924.

## JOHN JOSEPH PERSHING

On May 18, 1917, soon after the United States entered World War I, John Joseph Pershing was appointed to command the American forces that were to be sent to Europe. In October of that year the United States revived the ranks of general and lieutenant general (in order to place American commanders in Europe on a level with Allied commanders), and Pershing was made a full general, the fourth American soldier since George Washington to hold that rank. Pershing arrived in France on June 13, 1917, and at the crucial time, in the name of the President and people of the United States, placed his army at the services of General Ferdinand Foch. Among the numerous foreign decorations Pershing received are the Grand Cross of the Legion of Honor, conferred upon him on August 3, 1918, by the French government, and the French Croix de Guerre. He also received the American Distinguished Service Medal and the Victory Medal. In 1919 he was confirmed by the Senate as "General of the Armies of the United States." Two years later he became chief of staff and in 1924 he was automatically retired.

Pershing, born on September 13, 1860, was graduated from

the United States Military Academy at West Point as senior cadet Captain (the Academy's highest honor) and president of his class. His first service was against the Apache Indians of New Mexico and Arizona where he learned military tactics that were to stand him in good stead in his later campaigns in the Philippines and Mexico. For more than four years Pershing was engaged in military operations in the Philippines against the Moros, a fierce tribe of Mohammedans who had successfully resisted the Spaniards for more than 300 years. Pershing's achievement of not only subjugating them, but also winning their friendship, attracted favorable attention in military circles and on September 20, 1906, Pershing, then a captain, was promoted to the rank of brigadier general over the heads of 862 officers who outranked him in service. In 1915 he commanded a punitive expedition launched against the Mexican bandit, Francisco Villa. While he was engaged on this work his wife and three children were burned to death in a fire in San Francisco. Only his son, a boy of five, was rescued.

In 1926 Pershing went to South America as chairman of the Tacna-Arica plebiscite commission and later served as chairman of the American Monuments Commission in France. His book *My Experiences in the World War* appeared in 1931. General Pershing died in Washington, D. C., on July 15, 1948.

## DAVID LLOYD GEORGE

The youth of David Lloyd George, British statesman, was passed in Wales under conditions of severe simplicity and near poverty. He once said that one of his greatest luxuries as a child was half an egg on Sunday mornings. After he became a solicitor, he was too poor to buy his robes until he had a few cases.

Lloyd George entered Parliament as a Liberal in 1888. He began his rise to fame during the South African War, when he became the leader of the "pro-Boer" group. When World War I broke out, at which time he was chancellor of the exchequer, many expected him to resign because of his pacifist tendencies.

On the contrary he championed strong military action and by 1916 after having held several other important posts he became prime minister, which position he held until 1922. He was one of the prominent members of the Peace Conference in 1919. He published *War Memoirs* in 1933-36 and *The Truth about the Peace Treaty* in 1938. Lloyd George was born in 1863, and died on March 26, 1945 at his estate in North Wales.

## GEORGES CLEMENCEAU

The French statesman and editor Georges Eugène Benjamin Clemenceau, whose sobriquet was 'The Tiger,' was thrown into jail at the age of twenty for shouting 'Vive la République' in Paris during an Imperial celebration. From 1863 to 1870 Clemenceau lived, almost in exile, in America, where he learned English, traveled, studied American politics and taught French and literature at a young ladies' seminary. After his return to France he entered politics and gradually became known as a radical leader who stood for the ideals of the French Revolution.

Clemenceau's power, greatly strengthened by his journalistic activities, was broken in 1893 by suspicions of his complicity in scandals relating to the Panama Canal. For nine years he had no governmental connections, but he did return to journalism. It was in his newspaper, devoted to proving the innocence of Alfred Dreyfus, that Émile Zola published "*J'accuse*." Clemenceau himself also wrote. He was premier from 1906 to 1909 and again in 1917. After World War I he was made Permanent Chairman of the Peace Conference at Paris. He was born on September 28, 1841, and died on November 24, 1929. His coffin was placed upright in his will he said: "Even in death I wish to remain standing."

## NIKOLAI LENIN

Nikolai Lenin was the pseudonym of Vladimir Ilch Ulanov, the outstanding figure of the Russian Revolution. Lenin was

born on April 10, 1870, of a middle-class family. His work in school won praise, and there seemed to be the possibility of a brilliant career for him. But his chances were destroyed when his elder brother was hanged in 1887 as a revolutionist, after which the family joined the underground opposition to the czar's regime. Lenin was expelled from the University of Kazan as a radical and prevented from enrolling in any other until 1891, when he became a law student at the University of St. Petersburg. He developed into an expert in the field of Marxian theory as well as law, and his activities forced him into hiding once more. In 1895 in Switzerland he met revolutionary leaders who returned him to Russia to edit a workers' paper. This netted him three years of Siberian exile, during which he studied, wrote political tracts and kept in touch with his comrades who were forming the Social Democratic Party. Lenin had married while in St. Petersburg, and for the next seventeen years he and his wife lived simply in Russian colonies abroad. He worked for the party as one of the editors of a new paper, *The Spark*.

The party was weakened by a split in 1903 that lessened its strength in the revolution of 1905. This uprising failed, and during the ensuing years Lenin worked rebuilding the organization. When the czar was overthrown in 1917 Lenin was in Zurich, Switzerland. The Germans permitted him to cross their country on his way home. His arrival in St. Petersburg, on April 3, where he received a tremendous ovation, was a decisive event. He called upon his followers not to support the group that had overthrown the czar because they were compromisers who would continue the capitalist system. "The Bolsheviks can and must take power into their hands," he declared. In six months he achieved full control, and ordered an end to Russia's part in the war. In 1921 Lenin decreed The New Economic Policy, his last contribution to the organization of Soviet Russia. At the end of that year he suffered a stroke of paralysis and died on January 21, 1924. His body was mummified and put in a mausoleum on Red Square.

The lectures of Dr. Sun Yat-sen, the father of the Chinese Revolution, take the place of the sayings of Confucius with modern Chinese youth, and a part of Dr. Sun's will in which he pleads for the cause to which he dedicated his life is studied by the Chinese school children much as President Lincoln's *Gettysburg Address* is read by American children. Dr. Sun was born in 1866, in a small village in southeastern China. His parents were peasants. his home was a mud hut. and frequently there were neither shoes to wear nor rice to eat. He was brought up as a Christian and probably learned revolutionary ideas from his uncle. In Honolulu he learned English and was graduated with a good record from high school. The first graduate of a Hong Kong medical school, he had the respect of his teachers for his ability and a reputation as a radical.

Dr. Sun's cause was to win freedom for China and see her rank as an equal with the world's great nations. The first step in the process was the overthrow of the Manchu dynasty. Dr. Sun and some other young conspirators, who took as their motto "Divine Right does not last forever," planned an uprising in Canton that ended in the execution of some of the group. Dr. Sun escaped over the wall in a basket. He went to Japan, to Honolulu and then to the United States and finally to Europe. In 1898 when he returned to Japan, he had only 100 followers among 10,000 Chinese there. In 1900 another uprising failed, but later the revolutionary cause made progress. Chiang Kai-shek, who was to become China's generalissimo, met Dr. Sun in Japan in 1909.

By 1911 the leaders had control of a few provinces, and Dr. Sun was made provisional president of the Chinese republic. The Manchus called on an old soldier and adviser, Yuan Shih-kai, who cleverly played both ends against the middle. He persuaded the Manchus to abdicate and then destroyed all opposition to himself. Once more Dr. Sun became a conspirator. In 1916 President Yuan died, and the next few years brought plots and counter-plots during which Dr. Sun was first in and then out of power. Finally, with Russian help, he formed

his party along Communist lines. One of his assistants was Chiang Kai-shek. Dr. Sun finally allowed Chinese Communists to enter his party, although he did not believe in the theory of class war. In 1924 he left for Peking and died there on March 12, 1925, leaving Chiang to succeed him as the leader of the Nationalists.

## GEORGE BERNARD SHAW

George Bernard Shaw is primarily a dramatist, but there are many other facets to his character. He is also a socialist, critic, philosopher, orator, and a figure about whom legend has accumulated even though he is still alive. He is famous, among other things, for his love of fun, his keen wit, his generosity and his eccentricities. He has been quoted as saying that "you should live so that when you die God is in your debt." His own life would seem to indicate that he not only preaches, but also tries to abide by that philosophy.

As a boy Shaw, who was born in Dublin on July 26, 1856, acquired an appreciation for music and art. He left school at fifteen to take his first job in the office of a land agent. He acquitted himself admirably, but the work irked him so that he gave it up to make a career in literature in London. However, he strongly objects to being called the greatest modern English dramatist, not because of modesty, but because he is Irish. He has said of his first novel that it was "with merciless fitness" called *Immaturity* and that when it was thrown aside even the mice who nibbled on it "failed to finish it." Those first years in London were filled with poverty and discouragement, their outstanding event was Shaw's conversion to socialism. Eventually, however, his work as a dramatic critic gained recognition, and he became known as a brilliant journalist. He also achieved a reputation as a revolutionary propagandist, both as writer and debater. "In company with Shelley, Wagner, and Ibsen," he says, "I was a social reformer and doctrinaire, first, last, and all the time."

Shaw's first play was *Widowers' Houses*, produced in 1892.

*Arms and the Man* had a fair success in 1894. During the next ten years he wrote about a play a year, but he was not established in England until *John Bull's Other Island* appeared in 1904. His success in America had begun several years earlier. A large part of Shaw's dramatic work was done after he reached the age of forty, and more than half of it was done when he was past the age at which Shakespeare died. Some of his best plays including *Heartbreak House*, *Back to Methuselah* and *Saint Joan*, were written after he was more than sixty. Among his other tremendous successes are *Mrs Warrar's Profession*, *Candida*, *Man and Superman*, *The Doctor's Dilemma*, *Major Barbara* and *Pygmalion*. The two latter have been made into moving pictures. The Nobel prize for literature was awarded to Shaw in 1926. He donated the money to the Anglo-Swedish Foundation for spreading a knowledge of Swedish literature in English-speaking countries. This was characteristic of him, for he has given away much of his fortune.

## H. G. WELLS

Herbert George Wells English author, was born on September 21, 1866. He came from the lower middle class, his father a shopkeeper and his mother a lady's maid. Struggling constantly to better his position, he read whatever he could find. Scholarships enabled him to acquire an education at London University from which he was graduated with first-class honors and a degree in science. After teaching biology he took up journalism.

Wells's first book was published in 1895. He developed the scientific romance, introducing some fact, surmise or prophecy. Such are *The Time Machine*, *In the Days of the Comet*, and *The War of the Worlds*. Upon the latter was based an American radio dramatization produced by the director Orson Welles, which in October, 1938, frightened thousands of listeners who thought men from Mars had invaded the country.

With *Tono-Bungay* Wells began a series of novels dealing with contemporary society that includes *Marriage*, *Joan* and

*Peter, The Wife of Sir Isaac Harman, and The Research Magnificent Mr. Britling Sees It Through* was a moving war novel

The work with which Wells gained his greatest prominence, the *Outline of History*, has the great scope that its title implies and is an extraordinary combination of scholarship and popularization. Wells died on August 13, 1946

## MARIE CURIE

In 1902, forty-five months after she had announced the probable existence of radium, Marie Sklodowska Curie, in collaboration with her husband Pierre, succeeded in isolating from the mineral pitchblende a decigram of pure radium. Pierre had said that he hoped it would have a beautiful color, his wish was more than realized. Radium is spontaneously luminous. Notes on the progress toward their monumental discovery were written on the margins of one of Marie's cook-books between her ecstatic comments on the growth of their small daughter Irene. Their laboratory was a small shed with practically no heat or ventilation, and the pitchblende necessary for their work had been bought out of their own slender income.

Marie Curie was born in Warsaw on November 7, 1867. After she became involved in a students' revolutionary organization she was forced to leave the city. She went to Paris, where she took her science degree, and in 1895 she married Pierre Curie. After the discovery of the new element valuable in the treatment of cancer, the couple passed several years in research on its properties. In 1903 they received the Davy Medal of the Royal Society, and the Nobel prize in physics was divided between them and Henri Becquerel, French scientist, who disclosed the radioactive properties of uranium.

On April 19, 1906 Professor Curie was run over by a dray on the streets of Paris and killed. Madame Curie was asked to take up his work at the Sorbonne—the first time that a position in French higher education had been given to a woman. The

hall was packed for her first lecture, which she began at the point where Pierre had left off. She won the Nobel prize in chemistry in 1911. On Madame Curie's first visit to the United States, President Warren G. Harding, on behalf of the women of the country, presented to her a gram of radium. On her second visit she received \$50,000 to purchase radium for use in the radioactivity laboratory at Warsaw.

In 1920 Madame Curie was threatened with blindness, but a series of operations saved her sight. She was still not well, however, and knew she should stop work. "I don't know whether I could live without the laboratory," she said. She died at Valence, France, in July of 1934.

## SIGMUND FREUD

The Austrian psychiatrist Sigmund Freud, born on May 6, 1856, was the founder of psychoanalysis. He was interested at first in purely scientific research rather than medicine. An essay by Johann Wolfgang von Goethe entitled *Die Natur* influenced him to begin a medical career. He was graduated in medicine from the University of Vienna in 1881 and decided to become a clinical neurologist. A Viennese physician told him a curious incident concerning the cure of symptoms of hysteria. The patient was hypnotized and persuaded to recollect the circumstances of the origin of these symptoms and to express the emotions accompanying them. This was the beginning of what later became psychoanalysis.

Freud went to Paris in 1885 to study under the neurologist Jean Martin Charcot, who encouraged him in the revolutionary procedure of treating hysteria from a psychological point of view. At first Freud's work met with the decided disapproval of his colleagues. He attributed this and later opposition to the powerful resistance which he believed always operates against the subconscious mind. Subsequently Freud discarded hypnotism as a means of bringing out buried memories and began to develop a method he termed "free association." He believed that most hysteria is due to a nervous shock, emotional

and usually sexual in nature. The ideas connected with the situation are suppressed and as a result find their outlet in a state of hysteria. When the patient can be led to recalling and expressing these hidden ideas, he is on the road to recovery.

For ten years Freud worked alone in his field. Then in 1906 he was joined by a number of colleagues, and in 1908 the first International Congress for Psychoanalysis met. Two years later an International Association was founded. In 1909 he visited America, where the honorary degree of Doctor of Laws was presented to him. On his seventieth birthday he received congratulations from scientists all over the world and was accorded the freedom of the city of Vienna. Freud left Vienna for London in 1938, when the Nazis came to power. He continued his work in England, and died there on September 22, 1939.

Among Freud's writings are *Interpretation of Dreams, Its Relation to the Unconscious, Totem and Taboo, Psychopathology of Everyday Life*, and *A General Introduction to Psychoanalysis*.

## ALBERT EINSTEIN

Albert Einstein, one of the great men of modern science, was born on March 14, 1879, in Ulm, Germany. During his boyhood in Munich he was shy, sensitive and unhappy. His harsh teachers, whom he called 'non-commissioned officers,' considered him stupid and tried to flog sense into him. When they realized that he knew more about mathematics than any of them would ever know, they disliked him even more. Albert was also made to suffer from German anti-Semitism, and he hated the militarism of the German Reich to such an extent that he persuaded his father to promise him that he would never have to do compulsory military service. In 1894 the family moved to Italy. Later Einstein received the degree of Doctor of Philosophy at the University of Zurich in Switzerland, and taught mathematics and physics at the polytechnic school in Zurich. In 1900 he became examiner of patents in

the Berne patent office, where, having become a Swiss subject, he remained until 1909. In 1911 he took the chair of physics at Prague, and returned to the polytechnic school in Zurich the next year.

By 1913 Einstein was so well known that a place was made especially for him in Berlin as Director of the Kaiser-Wilhelm Physical Institute. He was elected to the Royal Prussian Academy of Science and received funds to enable him to devote his full time to research. In addition to membership in several other learned societies and academies, the universities of Geneva, Manchester, Rostock and Princeton conferred honorary degrees on him. In 1921 Einstein was the recipient of a Nobel prize. He came to America in the early thirties, and while he was away the Hitler government deprived him of his post in Berlin. In 1933 he was made professor of mathematics at the Institute for Advanced Study at Princeton, New Jersey. He took the oath of United States citizenship on October 1, 1940.

The work for which the famous scientist is best known is his theory of relativity, which has become a cornerstone of modern physics.

Although the intricacies of his scientific thoughts would seem to set him apart, Einstein's warm-hearted disposition has won him the admiration and friendship of the many who know of his deep interest in human welfare.

## HENRI BERGSON

Henri Bergson was one of the most highly esteemed of twentieth century philosophers. After his graduation from the École Normale in Paris, he took a position as teacher in Clermont. Here he underwent a transformation from a materialist into an idealist. In 1900 he accepted the chair of philosophy at the Collège de France.

Bergson's books *Time and Free Will*, *Matter and Memory*, and his chief work, *Creative Evolution*, raised storms of specu-

lation. He claimed that in addition to the physical brain, which he called the analytical mind, there is a creative intellect that is the force animating all men. This he called the Élan Vital, the Vital Spark, which is a keynote of Bergsonian philosophy. He also believed that time is dynamic rather than static. His lectures attracted a large popular audience.

In 1928 Bergson received the Nobel prize for literature. In 1940, the Hitler-controlled French government offered to exempt him from the decree requiring the resignation of all Jewish professors. He rejected this exemption and resigned from the Collège de France. He was born on October 18, 1859, and died on January 4, 1941.

## GEORGE SANTAYANA

George Santayana's philosophy is a combination of a belief in Plato's world of ideas, a denial of the existence of immortality and of God, and an admiration for the story of Christianity, which he terms a myth—scientifically false but poetically true. He regrets more than anything else that he did not live in Plato's time. He feels that he would have been much happier then. Santayana was born in Madrid, Spain, in 1863, and came to America as a child. After graduating from Harvard in 1886, he served there as an instructor and, from 1889 to 1912, as professor of philosophy. Upon leaving Harvard he returned to Europe. After World War I, he lived for a time in Rome and then went to Venice. He is not only a brilliant philosopher, but an eloquent speaker and a fine poet.

Santayana published his first essay in philosophy, *The Sense of Beauty*, in 1896. Many consider this the best American contribution to aesthetics, and he says it is his best-selling book because it still sells 100 copies a year. His great work is *The Life of Reason*, upon which he labored for seven years. His novel *The Last Puritan* appeared on February 2, 1936. More recently, Santayana has been living in Rome, producing new autobiographical and philosophic writings.

## EAMON DE VALERA

The leading statesman of modern Ireland, Eamon De Valera was born in New York in 1882, his mother was Irish and his father Spanish. He went to Ireland when he was very young, studied there, and taught mathematics and languages. He joined Sinn Féin, the Irish republican movement, and in 1916 he took part in the Easter Rebellion, the Irish uprising against British rule in Ireland. De Valera was sentenced to death, but this sentence was changed to life imprisonment. He was freed however, in 1917, in the general amnesty of Irish political prisoners.

De Valera, combining the scholarly calm of the teacher with the vigorous determination of the man of action, worked ceaselessly for his goal—the freedom of Ireland. When the Irish Free State was established in 1921, he opposed it as an incomplete realization of Ireland's place in the world. Gradually his opposition party increased in strength. In 1932 De Valera became President of the Executive Council. And in 1938 he negotiated a new treaty with Great Britain by which Ireland (except for six northern counties) achieved national independence, preserving, however, certain ties with the British Commonwealth of Nations. De Valera had long favored and encouraged the use of the native Irish or Gaelic language as the recognized equal of English, and the new Ireland is known also by the Gaelic name "Éire." During the Second World War, Ireland, under De Valera, remained neutral. In 1948 De Valera's party, Fianna Fáil (Soldiers of Destiny), was defeated by the Fine Gael (United Ireland) party, and John A. Costello became the head of the government.

## JEAN SIBELIUS

Jean Sibelius, who was born at Tavastelues, Finland, on December 8, 1865, is generally considered the founder of Finnish national music. Many tales are told of the early poverty of this great musician, such as his having sold one of his

compositions for \$2 But later he lived near Helsinki on a pension of 100,000 marks, the highest ever paid to a Finnish citizen with the exception of presidents Friends reported that during the Russian-Finnish War Sibelius was hidden and protected "like a national treasure" When he visited the United States in 1914 to conduct some of his works, he received the honorary degree of Doctor of Music from Yale University. In 1921 the first American performance of his Fifth Symphony occurred in Philadelphia During the New York World's Fair in 1939 he broadcast to the United States from Finland In the years which followed, admiration for his music continued to grow both in the United States and throughout the world.

Much of the music of Sibelius is founded on folk melodies and mythology His works include symphonies, symphonic poems (such as *The Swan of Tuonela* and *Finlandia*), choral and piano pieces, and a violin concerto Among his short compositions is the melancholy *Valse Triste*

## IGOR STRAVINSKY

The Russian composer Igor Fedorovich Stravinsky has conducted his own works many times in the concert halls of Boston, New York and other cities His first American tour was in 1925, and he later became a permanent resident of this country.

Stravinsky, who was born in Oranienbaum, in 1882, studied piano at an early age, but until 1902 he intended to become a lawyer. In that year he met the composer Nikolai Rimsky-Korsakov, who persuaded him to take up music He attracted widespread attention with his first ballet *The Firebird*, written for the Russian Ballet Company of Sergei Diaghilev, with whom Stravinsky was closely associated This was followed by a second ballet *Petrouchka*, one of the greatest of theater scores *Le Sacre du Printemps*, with choreography by Vaslav Nijinsky, was produced in Paris on May 29, 1913 The rather dissonant music met with such a storm of protest from the audience that Diaghilev had to plead for quiet, but in more recent years, the

composition has had its place in the standard orchestral repertoire Stravinsky's later works are abstract and highly concentrated, they include the oratorio *Oedipus Rex* and the *Symphonie des Psaumes*

## PABLO PICASSO

Pablo Picasso, the creator of cubism in modern art, was born in Malaga, Spain, on October 23, 1881. He received some early training from his father but in 1903 he settled in Paris, where he has developed his art. Picasso's early paintings were characterized by the influence of nineteenth century French painters, then came a change to warm colors, clear contours and careful space arrangements. The first of his cubistic pictures had a three-dimensional element which he later abandoned to work simply with color and design in patterns which had no resemblance to natural form but were intended to convey an idea of life and reality. Later he began once more to base his pictures on natural forms.

Notable pictures which are representative of the various periods in Picasso's work are *Madrilène* (First period), *La Vie* (Blue period), *Two Acrobats with a Dog* (Transition period), *La Toilette* (Rose period), *Les Demoiselles d'Algnon* (Negro period); *Fruit Dish* (Analytic Cubism); *The Violinist* and *Three Musicians* (Synthetic Cubism); *Two Seated Women* (Classic period), and the huge mural called *Guernica*, of 1937 (Period of New Forms). Picasso has also designed scenery, curtains and costumes for Russian ballets, and has done much interesting graphic work. Although continuing to be a controversial figure, Picasso has through the years gained increasing recognition as one of the foremost artists of the present day.

## MOHANDAS K. GANDHI

There was little in the early life of Mohandas Karamchand Gandhi to show that he was destined to become one of the

most magnetic personalities and most compelling leaders in India's long history. He was born on October 2, 1869, at Porbandar, India, the son of merchant-class parents. He was reared in an anti-British-atmosphere, for his father, who had been premier of several small native states, once rebuked a British commissioner in public and went to jail rather than apologize. At thirteen Gandhi married. At nineteen, already a father, he went to London to study law. Before departing, he vowed to lead a chaste, stoic existence. For three years he lived frugally in London on \$20 a month and then returned to India a qualified barrister, a member of the Inner Temple. He was disbarred by the Inner Temple in 1922 after his sentence to six years' imprisonment by the Indian courts.

Gandhi went to South Africa on a law case when he was twenty-three and stayed twenty years seeking to improve the status of his fellow Indians, who were discriminated against because of their dark skins. There, under the influence of Leo Tolstoy, Russian novelist, and Thoreau, the American writer, he developed his philosophy of non-violent civil disobedience as a means toward political ends. He returned to India in 1914, gave away his property, and took to wearing a loincloth to symbolize his joining the repressed millions who could afford no more. He preached political and economic freedom from England and urged the wiping out of religious enmities among Hindus and Moslems. He tried to uplift the Untouchables, victims of a system he called a "rotten everesence." Millions in India called him the Mahatma (great soul) and considered him a god.

Gandhi was in and out of prison most of his life as a result of his activities. He conducted many fasts or hunger strikes, using the fast as a means of calling attention to a particular injustice. One of his fasts began on February 10, 1913, and ended twenty-one days later. It was in protest over his internment behind barbed wire in the palace of the Aga Khan at Poona, where he was held by the British government after the outbreak of civil disobedience following rejection of Sir Stafford Cripps' plan for Indian independence. In the days of the Second World War Gandhi refused to support

Indian participation in the war on the side of Great Britain until the British would guarantee Indian independence at the close of the war. Gandhi was small, bald, and in his later years almost toothless. On January 30, 1948, shortly after having concluded a fast in protest against communal strife between Hindus and Moslems, he was assassinated.

## ✓ HERBERT HOOVER

Herbert Clark Hoover, Republican, was inaugurated as the thirty-first President of the United States on March 4, 1929. The career which prefaced his presidency was at variance with the usual career of a politician. Born on August 10, 1874, he was the son of Quaker parents. In preparation for an engineering career he entered the newly-opened Leland Stanford University in Palo Alto, California, from which he was graduated with a Bachelor of Arts degree in engineering in 1895. Among his fellow students was his future wife, Miss Lou Henry, said to be one of the most brilliant women graduates of Leland Stanford.

By the time he was thirty-four Hoover was among the most prominent members of the engineering profession and is reported to have been several times a millionaire. His experiences included mining projects in Australia and in China. He was in China during the Boxer Rebellion of 1900, when he received his first experience in distributing supplies to refugees. He achieved universal fame in this work during World War I. An organization under Hoover's direction superintended the exodus of Americans from Europe when the war broke out, sometimes caring for as many as 5,000 individuals in one day. He was the head of the Commission for Relief in Belgium, which during a four-year period fed or otherwise cared for 10,000,000 people. Hoover not only gave his services gratis in this capacity, but he also paid his own traveling expenses. After the United States entered World War I, Hoover was first the chairman of the food section of the Council of National Defense and next

the Federal Food Administrator. After the war he headed the American Relief Organization, which, between its formation in 1919 and its close in 1923, aided 200,000,000 persons. Hoover next served as the Secretary of Commerce in the cabinets of both President Warren G. Harding and President Calvin Coolidge.

Hoover's own presidential term was blighted by the economic depression which began in the fall of 1929. Among his efforts to relieve this situation was the formation of the Reconstruction Finance Corporation. In 1932, Hoover was defeated for re-election by Franklin Delano Roosevelt. In the following years Hoover headed various organizations for the relief of war-stricken populations. More recently he has worked with a committee on the reorganization of the executive branch of the Federal Government.

## WILL ROGERS

Will Rogers, lariat-twirling American humorist, was almost everything else before he settled down to his career as a philosophic jester. He was a cowboy, circus performer, actor, lecturer and writer. He starred in vaudeville, on the stage, and in motion pictures after they became audible. Will Rogers was born at Oologah, Oklahoma, in Indian Territory, on November 4, 1879, but he called Claremore, Oklahoma, his home town. He had some Indian blood, which explains his famous remark that when the *Mayflower* came over from England his ancestors "met the boat." Rogers twitted politicians unmercifully and joked with presidents and kings. He was a favorite character with the public because of his knack of translating into trenchant phrases the thoughts of "average" Americans.

One of America's foremost comedians, Will Rogers was also a leading booster of air travel. He flew about 500,000 miles during the last seven years of his life. He was killed with Wiley Post, American aviator, when the plane in which they were riding crashed near Point Barrow, Alaska, on August 15, 1935.

## RICHARD EVELYN BYRD

Richard Evelyn Byrd foreshadowed his extraordinarily brilliant record as an explorer by an unaccompanied trip around the world at the age of twelve. He was born in Winchester, Virginia, on October 25, 1888. After an academic career in several Virginia schools, he was graduated from the United States Naval Academy in 1912. Due to an injury to one of his feet he was placed on the naval retired list in 1916, but he continued in active service for several years thereafter. During World War I he commanded an aviation unit, and after the war he served as assistant director of naval aviation and liaison officer with Congress, in which capacity he was largely responsible for the creation of the Bureau of Aeronautics in the Navy Department. While in England for the purpose of assisting in the navigation of the dirigible ZR-2, he narrowly escaped death by missing a trial flight during which an explosion occurred that killed all on board. In 1922 Congress passed a special act making Byrd a lieutenant commander.

Byrd's polar expeditions were begun in 1925 when he commanded a naval unit which did the first regular flying in the Arctic for survey work. On May 6 of the next year, in the monoplane *Josephine Ford* (named for the three-year-old daughter of Edsel Ford), Byrd and Floyd Bennett flew over the North Pole in a non-stop flight that covered 1,360 miles and took fifteen and a half hours. For this exploit Byrd was promoted to the rank of commander. During his first trip to the Antarctic, working from the base which he established on the Bay of Whales and called Little America, his expedition accumulated a vast amount of scientific data and an impressive record of discovery. Byrd flew over the South Pole on November 29, 1929. By another special act of Congress he was made a rear admiral within a few days of this flight. It was on the second Antarctic expedition, which left New York in 1933, that Admiral Byrd almost lost his life while staying alone in a shack at an advanced outpost established to obtain meteorological records. In 1947, Byrd headed an expedition to the Antarctic for the U. S. Navy. Many new islands and mountain

ranges were discovered and much previously uncharted territory was mapped

Admiral Byrd has received more than twenty citations for services above and beyond the call of duty. The honors bestowed upon him have been legion. In addition to his achievements as naval officer and explorer, he is the author of newspaper and magazine articles, public addresses and five books. On January 20, 1915 he married Marie D. Ames of Boston, and they have four children

## EUGENE O'NEILL

One of America's leading playwrights Eugene Gladstone O'Neill first conceived the idea of writing plays during a winter passed in a tuberculosis sanatorium. O'Neill was born in New York City on October 16, 1888. He received some formal education, but his background was enriched by a variety of activities, including two years at sea and experience as an actor, a newspaper reporter and a clerk.

Publication of a volume of one-act plays, *Thirst*, in 1914, was followed by a year at Harvard. In 1916 O'Neill began to write for the Provincetown Players, who later produced nearly all of his early plays. In 1919 appeared *The Moon of the Caribbees and Six Other Plays of the Sea* which served as a basis for the notable motion picture *The Long Voyage Home Beyond the Horizon*, produced in 1920, won for the dramatist his first Pulitzer prize. For both *Anna Christie* and *Strange Interlude* O'Neill also received this award, and in 1936 he became the second American to win the Nobel prize for literature. Among his other plays are *The Emperor Jones*, *Desire Under the Elms*, *The Great God Brown*, *Marco Millions*, *Mourning Becomes Electra*, *Ah! Wilderness*, and more recently, *The Iceman Cometh*.

## GEORGE GERSHWIN

George Gershwin, American composer of modern music, is best known for his *Rhapsody in Blue* and the folk-opera *Porgy and Bess*. The son of Russian immigrants, he was born in Brooklyn, New York, on September 28, 1898. Gershwin, a Broadway song writer, elevated jazz from the levels of Tin Pan Alley to an accredited place in the musical world. Throughout his career he turned out popular songs by the dozen, many of them from his scores for hit musical comedies, but he also composed serious works of great artistic importance, including the *Concerto in F*, the *American in Paris* suite, and the *Second Rhapsody*.

Gershwin's first hit song was *Swanee* in 1919. Paul Whiteman, orchestra leader, introduced the *Rhapsody in Blue* in New York on February 12, 1924. *Porgy and Bess* was first performed in New York in 1935. The beauty and originality of the score were immediately recognized, and the work has been frequently revived since then. Gershwin died at the age of 39, in Hollywood, California, on July 11, 1937.

## SINCLAIR LEWIS

In 1930 the Nobel prize in literature was awarded to the author Sinclair Lewis, the first American to be accorded that honor. The publication of *Main Street* in 1920 established his widespread popularity, and thereafter the appearance of each new book became a literary event. *Main Street*, a picture of a contemporary American community, was followed by *Babbitt* (1922), a satire of life in a mid-western city, and *Arrowsmith* (1925), the story of a physician, for which he rejected the Pulitzer novel prize in 1926. In *Elmer Gantry* (1927) Lewis attacked commercialized religion. *Dodsworth* (1928) recounted the experiences of an American automobile manufacturer. *It Can't Happen Here* (1935) depicted the danger of a Fascist revolution in the United States. Among his more

recent novels which have attracted wide audiences are *Cass Timberlane* (1945) and *Kingsblood Royal* (1947).

Lewis was born on February 7, 1885. His Yale University days, which began in 1903, were interspersed with editorial and reportorial work, two trips abroad, work as a book clerk in a New York store, composition of magazine verse and articles and a visit to the Panama Canal.

In 1914 Lewis married Grace Livingston, from whom he was divorced in 1928. The same year he married Dorothy Thompson, newspaper columnist, from whom he was divorced in 1942. They have a son, Michael Lewis.

## ERNEST HEMINGWAY

Ernest Hemingway, one of the most influential novelists of his generation, is a native of Oak Park, Illinois, where he was born in 1898. Most of his boyhood, however, was passed in Michigan. He frequently accompanied his father, who was a doctor, on his rounds and was keenly interested in sports. His education was confined to public school attendance. He left his job as a reporter on the *Kansas City Star* to volunteer in an American ambulance unit in World War I. Later he was severely wounded on the Italian front and received the *Groce di Guerra*. Among Hemingway's earlier novels, *The Sun Also Rises* is notable. Outstandingly popular, as well as an artistic achievement, *A Farewell to Arms* is a story of the war in Italy.

Following the Armistice, Hemingway first reported for the *Toronto Star* and then became foreign correspondent for that paper. Much of his time since World War I has been passed in Europe. His early sojourns in Spain furnished him with background and inspiration for *Death in the Afternoon*, while his later stay there during the Spanish Civil War provided material for *For Whom the Bell Tolls*, one of his major works.

## FRANKLIN DELANO ROOSEVELT

Franklin Delano Roosevelt, thirty-second President of the United States, can be described as a democrat in the tradition of Thomas Jefferson. He was born at Hyde Park, New York, on January 30, 1882. Educated at Harvard and at Columbia Law School, he was admitted to the bar when twenty-five years old.

In 1905 he married (Anna) Eleanor Roosevelt, a distant cousin Mrs. Roosevelt, who has at all times taken keen interest in many of the country's social and economic problems, has frequently spoken in public and over the radio, and has also done a considerable amount of newspaper writing.

Roosevelt began his political career in 1910 as a delegate to the New York State Democratic Convention. In the same year he won a surprising victory in the State Senatorial election, over a Republican in a normally Republican district. In 1913 he became Assistant Secretary of the Navy, in the administration of President Wilson, in which capacity he served throughout World War I. His party chose him in 1920 as its nominee for the vice-presidency. In 1921 his career seemed at an end when he was stricken with infantile paralysis, but three years later he returned to political activity.

In 1928 he was elected Governor of New York although the national ticket of his party lost the state. As the executive of his state he undertook to carry out a social program that far exceeded in scope any that had ever before been presented to the state.

In 1932, in the midst of the national business "depression," Roosevelt was nominated for the presidency by the National Democratic Convention at Chicago. In the campaign that followed, he challenged the "laissez-faire" approach of his opponent toward the country's economic system and proposed his "New Deal" for the "forgotten man." After his election he followed a policy of economic reform based on the principle of swelling the national purchasing power by direct and indirect subsidy of the consumer—the average man. The outbreak of World War II found him in the forefront of the movement to oppose fascist aggression by the concerted action of all the

democracies As early as 1937 he had urged the international 'quarantining of the aggressor' It was in great part a recognition of his leadership in foreign affairs when he was re-elected President in 1940—the first President to be elected to a third term

In the summer of 1941, in an unheralded meeting off the coast of Newfoundland, President Roosevelt and Prime Minister Winston Churchill together offered the *Atlantic Charter* as a program for international conciliation

After the Japanese attack on Pearl Harbor and the entry of the United States into World War II in December, 1941, President Roosevelt guided the military and civilian activities of the United States, and played a major part in the joint leadership of the Allies As the war progressed he took part in many major international conferences at which key military and political plans were evolved and decisions made Returning from the conference at Yalta in southern Russia in February, 1945, President Roosevelt, who had been elected for a fourth term in November, 1944, was in noticeably poor health, and he succumbed to a sudden cerebral hemorrhage on April 12, 1945

## · WINSTON CHURCHILL

Prime Minister of Great Britain during most of the Second World War Winston Leonard Spencer Churchill assumed office at a time when the empire faced the gravest situation in its history That was in May, 1940, about a month before France, England's only ally on the European continent, collapsed before the seemingly invincible German war machine, about a month before the English forces barely survived the terrible disaster at Dunkerque The sham complacency of his predecessor was discarded and Churchill told the British people that he could promise them only "blood, sweat and tears" in the struggle immediately facing them

Churchill was born on November 30, 1874, the son of Lord

Randolph Churchill and the former Jennie Jerome, a beautiful, brilliant American heiress Graduating from Sandhurst. English military academy, he entered the army in 1895, serving with distinction soon afterwards in India and in the Sudan He was a newspaper correspondent during the Boer War. and was taken prisoner but later escaped A facile and prolific writer, he wrote several books on his adventures during these years.

His political career began with his election, in 1900, as Member of Parliament. He was then a Conservative, but six years later he again was elected, this time as a Liberal Between 1905 and 1915 he was a member of the cabinet As First Lord of the Admiralty from 1911, he played a great part in organizing the Royal Navy into readiness for the demands of the First World War. After a defeat sustained by the naval forces in their attempt to storm the Dardanelles, for which he was held responsible, Churchill lost his post. It was then that he turned to painting as a relaxation "a wonderful new world." He passed some time with the army in France and then returned as Minister of Munitions and, later, as Secretary of State for War.

Three years after the end of the war, having been defeated in an election, he went into brief retirement during which he wrote most of his book on *The World Crisis*. In 1924 he again won a seat in Parliament, as a Conservative, and soon was in the cabinet once more as Chancellor of the Exchequer. Later, in the House of Commons, and in the councils of his party, he was a leading exponent of immediate and effective opposition to Hitler's expansionist program. As England's supreme war leader in World War II he brought his country through its darkest hour.

Churchill continued in office until May, 1945, being succeeded by Clement Attlee, the leader of the Labour Party, as a result of the election which took place while Churchill was attending a conference with President Truman and Marshal Stalin at Potsdam, Germany, soon after the German surrender. Since then he has remained active as leader of his party in Parliament.

## JOSEPH STALIN

Stalin (the name means steel) is the Chairman of the Council of People's Commissars in Russia. His actual name is Joseph Dzugashvili. Stalin was born in December, 1879, in the Russian province of Georgia. His father wanted him to be a cobbler, but he took up theology. His career as a theological student ended when a volume of Karl Marx was found in his room. In 1900 he became a member of the Social Democratic Party. Between that time and 1917 Stalin worked in the inner party councils. He was arrested six times and escaped five. The last time, in 1913, he was sent to Siberia where he remained until the fall of the czarist regime.

Stalin had proved himself willing to do anything for the party and he possessed a thorough knowledge of the workers in Russia. He was entirely in sympathy with the leader of the movement, Nikolai Lenin, and was in close contact with him after 1917. For four years he served as Commissar of Nationalities, and then he became the party secretary. Lenin was wary of the feud which had broken out between Stalin and another political leader, Leon Trotsky, and warned his associates of its danger. Soon after Lenin's death Stalin offered to resign as secretary but was re-elected. He was successful in overcoming subsequent opposition, and in 1929 Trotsky was expelled from the country.

By this time the first Five-Year Plan, a plan for industrial expansion and economic stabilization, was in progress. This was followed by a second Five-Year Plan, and eventually Russia's prestige abroad increased. She became a member of the League of Nations and was recognized by the United States.

When Russia was attacked by Germany in June, 1941, Stalin directed the Red Army's brilliant defensive and offensive campaigns against the German invaders, which played such an important part in the Allied victory. After the war Russia extended its influence to neighboring countries, forming what came to be known as the Eastern bloc during the ensuing series of complex negotiations with the Western powers.

## CHIANG KAI-SHEK

Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek, president of the Chinese Republic and commander-in-chief of all its armed forces, learned the military art in Japan. He was born on October 31, 1887. After his father's death relatives sent him to a military school. At eighteen he went to Japan to continue his military studies. When the October revolution of 1911 began, Chiang was in Japan, an officer of the Japanese army. He went to Tokyo, bought civilian clothing, eluded the police and escaped to China. Within a month he was leading a band of revolutionists against the Manchu stronghold of Hangchow. Chiang became one of the chief officers of Dr. Sun Yat-sen, China's revolutionary leader. After Dr. Sun's death in 1925, Chiang gained in influence. A visit to Moscow in behalf of Dr. Sun had led to his acquaintance with Dr. Vassily Bluecher. The two men planned and executed the northern march of 1926, which tied together the north and south of China for the first time in fifteen years. By 1927 Chiang had established a national government in Nanking. More campaigns followed, extending his power to Peking.

In 1928 Chiang became president of the Chinese Republic, and three years later he was made commander-in-chief of all armed forces. Since 1927 he has been the acknowledged leader of the Kuomintang, China's Nationalist Party. Revolts and civil uprisings came continuously in the next few years to impede Chiang's efforts to create a unified China. The undeclared war with Japan began in 1937. Japanese generals had expected that China would fall apart, but Japanese oppression and brutality had the opposite effect. Factional disputes were forgotten, and China united behind Chiang as its valiant war leader. After Britain and the United States entered World War II, China became a full ally in the struggle against the Axis powers of Germany, Italy and Japan. After the surrender of Japan, the unresolved conflict between the Chinese Government and the Chinese Communist groups broke out once more, and Chiang Kai-shek was hard pressed to maintain the government's hold over large areas.

Generalissimo Chiang Kai-shek's wife, the former Mayling Soong, was educated in America at Wellesley College, and her knowledge of Western ways has been of great help to her husband, who has traveled little outside his country. She has been a guiding influence on the thoughts and decisions of the generalissimo Madame Chiang, who is known affectionately as "missimo," is a member of one of China's chief families, the Soongs. One of her sisters is Madame Sun Yat-sen, who was the second wife of the founder of China's republic.

## WENDELL L. WILLKIE

Wendell Lewis Willkie's name is associated with the concept of "One World," to the furthering of which he devoted his best energy during the last few years of his life. Coming into national prominence as the Republican Party's 1940 Presidential candidate, Willkie had been utilities executive and attorney, as well as a gentleman farmer. Although he failed to win his race against President Franklin D. Roosevelt, he kept his ideas before the public and continued to discuss the most important present-day issues.

Willkie was born at Elwood, Indiana, on February 8, 1892. He was educated in the Elwood public schools and was graduated from the University of Indiana in 1913. He had acquired at an early age a taste for literature, drama, and the law, and formed a habit of reading three or four books a week. Upon his return from World War I as a captain, he began the practice of law in his home town.

Willkie went to New York in 1929 to become associate counsel for the Commonwealth and Southern Corporation, a large utility concern, and four years later became its president. His most notable achievement during this period was his fight against the Tennessee Valley Authority, the government power development. After a long battle in the courts, he compelled the T.V.A. and associated enterprises to pay \$78,600,000 for the properties of the Tennessee Electric Company, \$23,000,000 more than the original offer. It was during this six-year con-

troversy that Willkie abandoned his long association with the Democratic Party

Registering with the Republican Party in 1939, Willkie was first mentioned late that year as one who would make an excellent candidate for president. A group of his admirers, responding to his expression of strong liberal convictions, started a Willkie campaign the success of which, culminating in his nomination on the sixth ballot at the Philadelphia National Convention, was a dramatic chapter in American political history. At the end of a hard-fought campaign Willkie lost, but 23,000,000 Americans voted for him

Recognizing Willkie as an unofficial representative of the American people President Roosevelt assigned various special missions to him shortly before and during our participation in the war. Thus, early in 1941 Willkie flew to England in behalf of lend-lease war aid to Britain. In September, 1942, because of his expanding interest in international affairs, he requested and was able to make arrangements for a trip which took him to Egypt, Turkey, Palestine, Iraq, Iran, Russia and China. He met the leaders of those countries, visited battlefronts, and gained a new sense of the inter-dependence of all nations. Returning home in October he made a 'report to the American people' by radio later enlarging this into his book *One World*

Stricken suddenly by an acute illness, Willkie died on October 8, 1944, at the age of 52

## DOUGLAS MacARTHUR

In March of 1942 General Douglas MacArthur relinquished his post on the valiantly defended Bataan peninsula in the Philippine Islands to make a dramatic 2 000-mile trip by plane, submarine and motor torpedo boat to Australia, where he became the supreme commander of the land, sea and air forces of the United Nations in the Southwest Pacific during World War II. He was accompanied on this historical trip by his wife and his young son Arthur

MacArthur was born at Little Rock, Arkansas, on January 26, 1880, and began his military career in the United States Military Academy at West Point, New York, from which he was graduated with highest honors in 1903. His first service, as a member of the engineers corps, was in the Philippine Islands, where years later he was to lead one of the most dramatic defenses in military history.

MacArthur participated in an expedition to Mexico in 1914, and when the United States entered World War I, he was chief of the censorship division of the War Department. He was promoted to the rank of colonel in August of 1917. As chief of staff of the Rainbow Division he went to France in October of that year. In February of 1918 he received a citation for gallantry from the commander of the French 7th Army, and the next June he became a brigadier general, leading actions north of Verdun, in the Meuse-Argonne offensive, and in the advance on Sedan, later taking his division to the Rhine as part of the army of occupation.

In June of 1919 he became superintendent of the Military Academy at West Point, the youngest officer ever to be so honored. In 1922, he was assigned to command the Manila district. In 1930 he was made Chief of Staff of the United States Army. Leave was granted to him in 1935 to help the Philippine Commonwealth prepare its national defenses. He was retired in 1937, at his own request, but was recalled in 1941, appointed commanding general of all United States troops in the Far East and promoted to the rank of lieutenant general. He became a full general in December of 1941.

After the surrender of Japan in August, 1945, MacArthur was placed in charge of the occupation of Japan, and his policies largely directed the post-war Japanese government.

## DWIGHT D. EISENHOWER

Dwight David Eisenhower was made a full general of the United States Army on February 11, 1943, being raised from

the rank of lieutenant general, and on the same day he was appointed supreme commander of Allied operations in North Africa (from the Atlantic to Egypt) for World War II. In 1944 he became supreme Allied commander for the invasion of Western Europe.

Eisenhower was born at Denison, Texas, in 1891, but grew up in Kansas and considers himself a Kansan. He was graduated from the United States Military Academy at West Point, New York, in 1915, in the upper third of his class and was assigned to the 19th Infantry at San Antonio, Texas. During World War I, he was placed in charge of tank training at Camp Colt, Pennsylvania. There he became a lieutenant colonel at the age of twenty-eight, with 6,000 men under his command, and at the end of the war he received the Distinguished Service Medal for his outstanding work with the tank corps.

Next, Eisenhower was chief of staff to General Douglas MacArthur in Washington in the early 1930's, and helped centralize control of military air power. Several years later he was a special aide to MacArthur in the Philippines, where he had a part in formulating the defensive strategy which was used against the Japanese drive on Corregidor and Bataan. During army maneuvers in Louisiana in the fall of 1941, Eisenhower was chief of staff of General Walter Krueger's 3d Army, and he helped direct the tactical operations of 220,000 men. When the maneuvers ended, Eisenhower was a brigadier general.

Five days after Pearl Harbor, Eisenhower was summoned to Washington as chief of the War Operations Division. It was his task to determine where American forces should be allotted, where they should defend and where attack, and when they should be sent into action. During his six months in the War Department Eisenhower was second only to General George C. Marshall, the Chief of Staff. In June of 1942 Marshall appointed Eisenhower as commander of United States Forces, European Theater of Operations, including ground, air and naval branches. As Allied commander-in-chief of the North African and Mediterranean areas, he conducted the great and successful campaigns of the Allied forces in Tunisia and Sicily, carrying them to Italy, and then as commander of Allied forces

in Western Europe, planned and executed the landings in Normandy, the liberation of France, and the invasion of Germany, thus forcing the German surrender

After the war General Eisenhower was named Chief of Staff of the U. S. Army, succeeding General Marshall. In 1948 he retired and was chosen president of Columbia University.

## GEORGE C. MARSHALL

George Catlett Marshall, Chief of Staff of the United States Army during the Second World War, followed his long military service by his peacetime civilian role as Secretary of State in the Truman administration. Marshall was born in Uniontown, Pa., on December 31, 1880. He attended Virginia Military Institute, and in 1901 he was commissioned a second lieutenant in the Army. At the time of America's entrance into the First World War he held the rank of captain, serving in France with the First Infantry Division. In the course of the war he became Chief of Operations on General Pershing's staff.

Following the close of the war, he devoted himself to his professional duties as an officer in the Army. After a tour of duty in Tientsin, China, he returned to the United States in 1938, and was named Chief of Staff by President Roosevelt. During the Second World War his responsibilities included the formulation of over-all strategy for the United States armed forces and, as a member of the Allied joint board of operations, for Allied operations as a whole.

Soon after the close of the war he retired from the Army and, at the urging of President Truman, accepted appointment as special envoy to China to attempt a reconciliation between the warring Chinese Nationalists and Communists.

In 1947, Marshall was made Secretary of State, and won early approval of a program for European recovery which became known as the "Marshall Plan." He took an active personal part in a large number of major international conferences and meetings of the United Nations.

## THOMAS E. DEWEY

Thomas Edmund Dewey, Republican candidate for the Presidency in 1948, first became a prominent figure in 1935 and 1936 when, as a special district attorney in New York City, he conducted a series of vigorous dramatic campaigns against racketeers and gangsters.

Born on March 22, 1902, in Owosso, Michigan, he attended the University of Michigan. While a student at the university, he won a state singing contest and later went to New York to study voice. At the same time, however, he enrolled in the law school of Columbia University. Choosing between these two careers, he devoted himself to law. In 1928 Dewey married Frances Eileen Hutt of Sapulpa, Oklahoma, and they have two sons.

Following his success as special prosecutor, Dewey was elected district attorney in New York City. In 1942 he became the first Republican governor of New York State in twenty years. Almost immediately he was mentioned as a possible Republican candidate for the Presidency, and in 1944 he was nominated as his party's standard-bearer. Campaigning in the midst of a global war, Dewey based his appeal primarily on his administrative record as governor of New York. He lost the election to Roosevelt by 3,596,000 votes.

Continuing in office as governor, Dewey was again named Republican candidate for the Presidency in 1948, becoming the first Republican to have been re-nominated for President.

Second World War to a successful conclusion. Simultaneously with attention to military problems, he put his full support behind the plans for holding an international conference designed to establish an organization for permanent peace, and he addressed the opening session of the conference in San Francisco a few weeks after assuming office. It was at this conference that the United Nations was brought into being.

Truman was born on a farm near Lamar, Mo., on May 8, 1884. Following his graduation from high school in Independence, Mo., he held various positions locally and in Kansas City, and during the First World War, he served in France with the artillery, rising to the rank of major. On his return to civilian life he opened a haberdashery store in Kansas City. In 1919, he married Bess Wallace, of Independence, Mo. Their daughter Margaret is their only child. Truman attended the Kansas City Law School from 1923 to 1925. Between 1924 and 1934 he was a judge in the Jackson County Court in Missouri. During this time he began to take an active part in politics. In 1935 he was elected United States Senator from Missouri. He first came into national prominence as the chairman of a Senate committee which investigated war production. He was nominated as Roosevelt's running mate at the 1944 Democratic convention in Chicago.

As President, following the conclusion of the war, Truman's foreign policy took the form of support of nations which were sympathetic to the ideals of Western democracy and of containing the spread of Communist influence. This program came to be known as the "Truman Doctrine." This foreign policy had the approval of both the Democratic and Republican factions in Congress. In domestic policies, however, the Republicans opposed most of the measures which he advocated, and within his own party there were diverging groups which opposed him on specific issues.

Truman was nominated for a new term in the Presidency at the Democratic convention in Philadelphia in July, 1948. He conducted a vigorous campaign throughout the country and was elected, thus being chosen President in his own right.

**Was this book of value to you? Here is a partial list of new Permabooks titles now available:**

**Common Errors in English and How to Avoid Them by Alexander M. Witherspoon, Ph.D.**

**Best Loved Poems edited by Richard Charlton MacKenzie**

**Best Quotations for All Occasions edited by Lewis C. Henry**

**Sex and the Love Life by William J. Fielding**

**The Standard Bartender's Guide by Patrick Gavin Duffy**

**The Conquest of Fear by Basil King**

**Ida Bailey Allen's Cookbook**

**How to Write Letters for All Occasions by Alexander L. Sheff and Edna Ingalls**

**Best Jokes for All Occasions edited by Powers Moulton**

**Eat and Reduce! by Victor H. Lindlahr**

**How Shall I Tell My Child? by Belle S. Mooney, M.D.**

**The Male Hormone by Paul de Kruif**

**Something to Live By by Dorothea Kopplin**

**Sight Without Glasses by Dr. Harold M. Peppard**

**Blackstone's Tricks Anyone Can Do**

**Fortune Telling for Fun and Popularity by Paul Showers**

✓ **Handy Encyclopedia of Useful Information by Lewis Copeland**

**Famous Sheriffs and Western Outlaws by William MacLeod Raine**

**Good English Made Easy by J. Milnor Dorey**

**Mathematics for Home and Business by William L. Schaaf, Ph.D.**

✓ **Modern Sex Life by Edwin W. Hirsch, B.S., M.D.**

✓ **Life With Mother by Clarence Day**

✓ **Strange Customs of Courtship and Marriage by Wm. J. Fielding**

**Brief Biographies of Famous Men and Women by W. Stuart Sewell**

**What Your Dreams Mean by Herbert Hespro**

✓ **Handy Legal Adviser for Home and Business by Samuel G. Kling**

**New titles are added monthly. See your local dealer for these and other new PermaBooks.**

